Victorian
915.4
M228c
1846

Joseph Earl and Genevieve Thornton Arrington

Collection of 19th Century Americana

Brigham Young University Library

BRIGHAM YOUNG UNIVERSITY
3 1197 21976 0805

460/13

CAMP AND BARRACK-ROOM;

OR,

THE BRITISH ARMY AS IT IS.

BY

A LATE STAFF SERGEANT OF THE 13th LIGHT INFANTRY.

LONDON:

CHAPMAN AND HALL, 186, STRAND.

1846.

C. WHITING, BEAUFORT HOUSE, STRAND.

UPB

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

PAGE

Enlistment 5

CHAPTER II.

Departure from Dublin: Feelings on the Occasion.—Condition of Recruits on board the Steamers.—Lands at Gravesend. Drive to Chatham.—Is sent to the Receiving House: its Description: Treatment there.—Brought to the depôt Barracks.—Inspected by the Medical Officer 9

CHAPTER III.

Attacked with Fever and goes to Hospital.—Manner of Amusement there.—Is discharged, and sent to Drill.—Daily Routine of Duties.—Sees a Man flogged.—Causes of desertion at Chatham.—Abuses in the Army.—Applies for Leave to proceed to India.—Character of the Officer commanding the Depôt 17

CHAPTER IV.

Inspected by the Commandant.—Disorders during the Night.—Marches from Chatham.—Embarks at Gravesend.—Sea Necessaries.—Loosening Hammocks. — Formed into Watches. — Deprived of Bed-clothes.—The Ship puts into Portsmouth.—Stands to Sea again.—Condition of the Soldiers' Wives.—Is struck off Duty.—Makes the Island of Madeira.—Occurrences while there.—Arrives in the hot Latitudes.—Improper Conduct of the Men.—Causes which produce Irregularities on board Ship 27

CHAPTER V.

Crossing the Line.—Is becalmed.—Remarks on the phosphorescent Properties of Marine Bodies.—Catches the Trade Winds.—Accident during Prayers.—Sail in sight.—Arrives in the Cape Seas.—Rough Weather.—Cape Birds.—Weathers the Cape.—Losses sustained 45

PAGE

CHAPTER VI.

Makes the Bay of Bengal.—Diet on board Ship.—Arrives off the Sunderbunds.—Calms: Feelings during them.—Misses the Light Ship.—Gets a Pilot.—Land is seen.—River Ganges.—Anchors off Cudgeree.—Barter with Natives: their Appearance 57

CHAPTER VII.

Proceeds up the River.—Arrives at Calcutta.—Disembarks.—Description of Fort William, Calcutta, &c.—Bad Conduct of the Detachment.—Remarks on the Native Troops 67

CHAPTER VIII.

Embarks in a Steamer for Bombay.—Proceeds to Sea.—Arrives at Point de Galle.—Native Boats.—Is permitted to go on Shore.—Description of the Fort, &c.—Sees a Water-Spout.—Arrives at Bombay.—Occurrences in the Town 80

CHAPTER IX.

Sails for Kurratchee.—Begins to learn Hindoostanee.—Soldiers interfere with the Lascars. — Chinese Carpenters. — Arrives at Kurratchee.—Disembarks.—March to the Camp: its Description.—Inspected by the Commander-in-chief.—Gets the Route to Sukkur 89

CHAPTER X.

Embarks.—Arrives off the Indus.—Want of Water.—River Steamers.—Sick Sepoys: their Dislike to Scinde.—European Prisoners.—Proceeds up the River.—Wood Stations.—Description of the Indus.—Mode of Irrigation.—Flight of Locusts.—Condition in the Steamer.—Gets aground.—Arrives at Sukkur.—Regimental Canteen.—Is sent to Drill.—Description of the Camp ... 99

CHAPTER XI.

Light in which Recruits are viewed.—General Remarks on the Men.—Removes into Cantonments.—A Hail Storm.—Sergeant murdered.—Patrick's Day.—Drunkenness and its Evils.—Liquor selling.—Benefits of Temperance to the Soldier 128

PAGE

CHAPTER XII.

Is dismissed from Drill.—Intense Heat.—Its Effects.—Sent to write in the Orderly-room.—Description of Sukkur.—Inefficiency of the troops in the Hot Season.—Sukkur a useless and expensive Acquisition..... 147

CHAPTER XIII.

Manner of Amusement.—Soldiers' Libraries.—Lying in the open Air at Night.—Mode of living.—Scindean Fishing and crossing the Indus.—Rations.—Tameness of Animals.—Grave-yard.—A Soldier refuses to attend Divine Service Parade.—Half-caste Wives of Soldiers.—Death of European Women..... 154

CHAPTER XIV.

Improvements in the Cantonments.—Wages of Natives.—Is appointed Orderly-room Clerk.—Execution of a Murderer.—English and Irish Soldiers compared.—Bazaar Cyprians.—Laxity of Morals in the East.—Batta.—Weather becomes cooler.—Mutiny of the 64th.—A Sergeant-major attempts to commit Suicide.... 166

CHAPTER XV.

River attains its full Height, and begins to subside.—Increase of Sick.—Is attacked with Malaria Fever.—Execution of the Ring-leaders in the Mutiny of the 64th Sepoys.—Departure from Sukkur,—Conduct of the Camp-followers.—Reaches Sewhan.—Musquitoes.—Baggage-guard of the 78th Highlanders.—Boatmen of the Indus.—Number of Sick.—Shikargahs of the Ameers.—Journey to the Camp.—Continues the March.—Prisoners escape.—Marching in India.—Arrives at Kurratchee.—Hospital Establishment.—Occurrences while in Hospital.—Mirage of the Desert 178

CHAPTER XVI.

Volunteering opens.—Continues to be attacked with Fever.—Want of Tents.—Severe Duty.—Address from the 35th N. I.—Theatre at Kurratchee.—Governor's Departure.—Visits the Town.—Improvements in the Station 206

CHAPTER XVII.

Ordered to Bombay.—Embarks.—Condition in the Steamer.—Re-

PAGE

covers from the Fever.—Description of Bombay, &c.—Natives.—Dress of the women.—Esplanade.—Climate.—Hindoo Patience.—Parsees 216

CHAPTER XVIII.

Origin of Fire Worship.—Its Introduction in Persia by Zoroaster.—History of the Guebres; their Defeat by the Arabs.—Arrival in India, &c. &c.—Religious Tenets.—Festival Days.—Marriage Ceremony.—Customs and Manners 224

CHAPTER XIX.

Colabah Barracks.—Depôt Women.—Half-castes.—Conduct of the Adjutant.—The Mohurrum, Mahometan Sects.—Skeleton of the 78th arrives.—Embarks for England.—Accommodations on board Ship.—Rations.—Ship's Crew.—Officer's Ignorance.—Makes the coast of Africa.—Rough Weather.—Clears the Cape Seas 238

CHAPTER XX.

Arrives at St. Helena.—Visits Napoleon's Tomb.—St. Helena Regiment.—Statistics of the Island.—Italian Nuns.—Puts to Sea.—Is becalmed.—Makes the Azores.—Arrives in England.—Marches to Walmer.—Is harshly treated.—Is discharged.....253

LAST CHAPTER BUT ONE.

Addressed to those interested in the Welfare of the Soldier.

The Class the Army must be drawn from.—Military Laws of Punishment and Reward.—Corporal Punishment: how it may be rendered less frequent.—Non-commissioned Officers, &c. &c. 268

CHAPTER THE LAST.

Chiefly addressed to the Soldier himself..... 287

Table, showing the probable Proportion to each other of the Causes which induce Men at present to enter the Army..... 311

Glossary 313

CAMP AND BARRACK-ROOM;

OR,

THE BRITISH ARMY AS IT IS.

CHAPTER I.

ENLISTMENT.

In consequence of a mercantile friend, whose affairs were inextricably interwoven with mine, sustaining several heavy and unforeseen losses in trade, it became necessary that I should seek for other means of support, besides those arising from my position as his junior partner.

This necessity, however, it was confidently expected by us, would only continue to exist for two or three years at furthest; when, by prudent and economical management, the liabilities of the firm must be discharged; and it was arranged, that I should then resume my original position in partnership.

Although I could have made choice of a situation as clerk in the counting-houses of several of my acquaintance, I would not accept it. I had always been desirous of travelling, and now resolved to gratify the propensity. With this object in view, I determined on entering some

regiment on foreign service, which should be likely to return in two or three years; when I intended to purchase my discharge, if my partner's affairs had again become prosperous. Should the contrary, however, be the case, I thought my better plan would be, to remain still in the army, and get promoted if possible: the service of Her Majesty being then, in my estimation, fully as honourable as that of a mercantile company, or of an individual.

Many may think this a very strange course of procedure, and such indeed it was; still, as I was destitute of means to gratify my inclination to travel, and disliked a sailor's life, I had no other resource.

Having come to the resolution of entering the army, my next subject for consideration was, whether I should be a dragoon or a foot soldier. I had certainly a taste for the cavalry, from having lived a long time in the country, and become fond of riding; but the vicious kickings and plungings of a sable charger, while being cleaned in a stable at Portobello barracks, whither I went to have a peep at the scarlet jackets, brought about a total change of inclination; as I saw that however pleasant equestrian exercise may be, tending troop horses is not the most delectable employment in the world. The next morning, as I sauntered along in the direction of the Royal Barracks, I met a soldier with the recruiting ribbons pendant from his shako, and stopped to question him as to the corps he was enlisting for.

He named several, eyeing me narrowly the while, as if calculating from my outer man what he would make by me in the shape of bye-fees, smart-money, &c.; but disliking his scrutiny, and tedious manner of eulogizing the different corps as he proceeded, I demanded somewhat abruptly if he had a gazette with him, receiving an answer in the negative. He informed me, however, that if I

would accompany him to Beggars Bush barracks, his sergeant could supply me with one. Thither we accordingly went; on arrival there, the gazette was duly produced; and, running my eye down the column which gave information as to stations of regiments, it rested on the 13th Light Infantry, then so noised abroad for its services in Affghanistan, and defeat of the terrible Akbar Khan.

The length of its stay in India, I ascertained, could not be more, in the usual course of things, than two years; a circumstance which tallied exactly with my views; and being told the corps was a good one, I at once resolved to join it. A shilling was placed in my hand, and I was a soldier—one of the gallant 13th! the illustrious heroes of Ghuznee, Julgah, and Jugdulluk, and many other well fought fields. What paynim metamorphosis ever was effected quicker!

Next day I was attested at a police office (being approved of by a surgeon in the interim); and subsequently received permission to dispose of myself as I pleased, until required to proceed to England. One condition only being imposed, that I should appear at the barracks at ten o'clock each day.

After promising to do so, I returned to my lodgings; and sending for a Jew of my acquaintance, sold him my watch, and the better part of my clothes; and thus with the money I had previously by me, I found myself in possession of a tolerably large sum for a recruit. On the exit of the accommodating Hebrew, I sat down to ruminate over my altered fortunes and future prospects. The latter certainly were not of a nature to be envied: still, I felt cheered by the reflection that I was young and healthy, with the world before me for an inheritance; and as regrets were equally idle and unavailing,

I determined on being as much of a Diogenes as possible.

My stay in Dublin, after my enlistment, was but for a few days; and despite my philosophical resolutions to the contrary, I felt unusually sad on bidding some old and valued friends adieu, the evening prior to my departure.

The reflection too, that I could no longer have intercourse with them on terms of equality as hitherto, was productive of additional pain. I had sunk from their level in society; betaken me to what is considered the last resource of the unfortunate and the profligate; and an insuperable bar was placed between our future associating, according to the conventional usages of the world.

CHAPTER II.

DEPARTURE FROM DUBLIN: FEELINGS ON THE OCCASION.—CONDITION OF RECRUITS ON BOARD THE STEAMERS.—LANDS AT GRAVESEND. DRIVE TO CHATHAM.—IS SENT TO THE RECEIVING HOUSE: ITS DESCRIPTION: TREATMENT THERE.—BROUGHT TO THE DEPOT BARRACKS.—INSPECTED BY THE MEDICAL OFFICER.

THE rain fell in torrents, and the day was excessively raw and cold for the season, as the *City of Limerick* steam-packet, bound for London, stood out of Dublin harbour. I was in consequence unable to keep the deck, to watch the spires of the beautiful capital of my native country, receding in the distance.

Under even the most agreeable circumstances, the quitting home and fatherland, for a long period, is painful in the extreme. It is at such a time that those latent feelings of attachment, of whose very existence we had hitherto been almost unconscious, assert their full power over our hearts. Situated as I was, those feelings came with tenfold strength. The life of a soldier is not the most reputable one in the opinion of the world; and although I had thought otherwise, I could not avoid in that hour of regret having my sentiments biassed by those of others, however prejudiced.

When off Kingston the day brightened up a little; and although a soaking rain still continued to fall, I went on deck to have a last look at the shores of the bay, asso-

ciated as they were in my mind with many a pleasant jaunt and happy hour. The wind had by this time freshened to a stiff gale, blowing right inshore; and the huge waves were breaking with sullen roar on the dark cliffs of Howth and Dalky, whose scathed crests loomed heavily through the thin fog, which now partially hid objects from the eye. But my stay upon deck was short; the roughness of the sea soon caused nausea, and I was under the necessity of again going below, and turning into a berth, for the use of which I had paid the difference between a deck and a second-cabin passage. The other recruits, poor fellows! were but miserably accommodated; their only shelter being a shed on the upper deck, which admitted the rain almost as fast as it descended, so that the straw provided for them to lie upon soon became wet. In consequence of this, after the first night, they were obliged to get under a tarpaulin, spread at the lee side of the funnel, from beneath which they crawled every morning chilled and comfortless, and looking as wretched as it is possible to conceive. One of them in particular I sincerely pitied, and regretted that I could not get him a berth such as my own. He was a slight, delicately-formed youth, and had evidently been tenderly reared. His father, as I afterwards learned, had been a captain in the army; but a considerable time had elapsed since his death; and as his mother, from some untoward circumstance, never got the pension usually given to the widows of deceased officers, after various turns of fortune he found himself under the necessity of entering her majesty's service as a common sentinel.

After a boisterous and unpleasant run of three days, we made the English Channel, and stood into Plymouth harbour to take in coals, our supply of fuel having been

exhausted from the delay caused by a head wind. A few hours sufficed for this purpose, and we again stood out to sea; and as it was now a fair wind, sail was made, and point and headland were passed in rapid succession, as we went along at eleven knots an hour.

As evening approached the breeze lulled, and the sea went down; the giant waves gradually dwindling away into tiny ridges, whose crest of hoar sparkled brightly in the sun, which now appeared from behind a mass of impervious cloud that had hitherto obscured it.

Our fourth night at sea was passed at anchor in the Downs. On the ensuing morning we made the Thames, and it was with no small degree of interest I gazed for the first time on the yellow waters of this noble stream, the great highway of the Babylon of our own times. Since then I have sailed on the sacred Ganges, and traversed the classic Indus, and neither of these rivers awoke a corresponding feeling in my mind.

As the steamer ascended the river it began to rain rather heavily, and I had to go below; but on nearing Gravesend, the day again brightened up, and when off the town, the vessel lay to in order to permit of our landing. So, getting into a boat which came alongside, in a little time I was once more on *terra firma*. At the landing-place some half dozen omnibuses were drawn up awaiting passengers, and three of their drivers pounced simultaneously on my trunk, each tugging with all his might to bear it away, heedless of its owner, whom they expected as a matter of course to follow it. I looked on passively for a few minutes, thinking that a row must ensue, which in the sister island would have been the infallible result of a similar scene; but these worthies pulled and wrangled like lawyers at the bar

with the most laudable good humour, until at length, seeing there was no sign of a shindy, I interfered in behalf of one of them, who accordingly bore off the bone of contention to his vehicle.

Having procured some edibles and a glass of ale by way of ballast, feeling somewhat lightheaded and unsteady from the rolling of the steamers, I mounted the omnibus, and started for Chatham; the old staff-sergeant in charge of the party having given his consent to my proceeding in this way, on condition that I should wait at a public-house in Rochester until he joined me with the other recruits. The drive to me was exhilarating in the extreme, after the discomforts of a steamer; and I felt, notwithstanding the corally depths and azure hue of the sea, that it is far pleasanter to look on hill and dell, and tree and flower, than on its mountain waves and boundless expanse. Large drops of rain glittered tremblingly on spray and leaf like matin dew, and I fancied, as the vehicle rolled rapidly along, that a May-day breeze was never more fragrant, or nature more beautiful, than then. The road wound through a pretty and picturesque district, clad in the rich garb of early summer, where the land laid down under crops, displayed the height of agricultural perfection; taste and neatness being everywhere visible, while not a single perch of ground was lying waste. As I recollected the contrast to this state of things in my own country, the result of negligence or a pernicious adherence to old customs, I could not help sighing; but I trust that a better spirit has already gone abroad through Ireland, and that the practical farmer is daily becoming a more enlightened man.

Arrived at Rochester, I remained at a public-house, agreeably to the instructions of the old staff-sergeant, until

he came up with the other recruits, when we proceeded together to the barracks, and being there duly handed over by him to the proper authorities, were marched to the Receiving-house. The number of recruits already there was upwards of two hundred, the larger part of whom were in no way distinguished for orderly conduct, while many of them had vice and ruffianism stamped indelibly on their faces.

It was, however, only natural to expect that characters of this description should be met with in a place where the very offscourings of several of the principal cities of the United Kingdom were congregated. Rogues and scoundrels were jumbled together *en masse;* and these, despite their relationship, agreed in no one respect, save in fleecing their more simple companions, by means of cards, pitch and toss, &c., to the utmost extent of their knavish abilities, and in utter contempt of Her Majesty's regulations touching gambling. They likewise indulged without restraint in the use of the most foul and abominable language, and I certainly felt considerable pain of mind as I asked myself, are these to be my future companions? Hard fare I little cared for, and it mattered not to me how rough my bed might be; privations of this nature are inseparable from a soldier's lot; but the prospect of mingling for any lengthened period with some of the individuals I saw in the Receiving-house, was, I must acknowledge, excessively disheartening. I was not then aware what a surprising alteration for the better in many respects, subjection to a strict and uniform discipline would effect in them in a little time.

All recruits on their first arrival at Chatham, are sent to the Receiving-house; hence its name; and are obliged to remain there until they pass the garrison doctor, and

are finally approved of by the lieutenant-colonel of the provisional battalion; when they receive their uniforms, and are sent to their several depôts. The sleeping accommodations in this place were any thing but of the best; no one being allowed sheets, because they are said to be retentive of a certain contagious disease, of a most disagreeable though not very dangerous character: and as to the beds, they were, as one of my companions facetiously expressed it, like the continent of Asia, thickly peopled with black, brown, and white inhabitants. The origin and perpetuation of this nuisance, may in part be ascribed to the uncleanly habits of some prior to enlistment.

Into this den of living abominations was I thrust with my companions; and half an hour might have subsequently elapsed, when a huge Yorkshire fellow made his appearance, who had been installed as hair-cutter, or rather hair-shearer to the establishment; and who, *ex officio*, was armed with an enormous pair of scissors, which reminded me of the implement used by farmers for clipping hedges. As I chanced at the time to be next at hand, this worthy of the staff at once commenced operations on my head; constructing his parallels and approaches towards its vertex with such accuracy and expedition, that in a few moments I was in a similar situation to one most coveted in the halcyon days of boyhood, when I might pommel my school-fellows without mercy, and be in no danger of having my hair pulled by an antagonist; a punishment, by-the-by, I dreaded as much as ever blacky did a kick in the shin. This close hair-cutting system, it is said, has been adopted in order that recruits may, like barbers' shops, be known by their *bare poles*, should they desert, or attempt to quit the barracks before being clothed in uniform.

As night approached, I began, in Yankee parlance, to calculate where I should stow myself away during the hours sacred to repose; for, fatigued as I was after a first voyage, to lie in any of the beds was a thing out of the question altogether. After due consideration of the matter, I was fain to betake me to the boards by way of a resting-place; and even thus would soon have been wrapt in the arms of the god of dreams, but for the other denizens of the attic, among whom a row extraordinary arose, owing to there not being a sufficiency of bed-clothes for the whole, and a system of monopoly having been adopted in consequence, by the stronger recruits.

This conduct was not quietly submitted to by the others; and blankets and quilts were pulled about in a way highly detrimental to government property; the crisis meantime approaching when black eyes and bloody noses might in due course be expected. But while the fray was still in embryo, the entrance of the superintending corporal, the sole monarch of the place, put an end to all further squabbling: and as we chanced to have got into a wrong room, he ordered us all to decamp forthwith. Fortunately for me, a sergeant of my corps now appeared, and directed us of the 13th to follow him to the quarters of our depôt; the Receiving-house being, it seemed, too full to admit of our stay. My new quarters I found to be a very heaven, compared with the place I had left. Clean sheets were given to me, and a soldier of the room in which I was located, good-naturedly making down my bed, I trundled into it; and being heartily tired, was soon wrapt in sleep.

The sun streamed broad and bright through a window at the head of my cot when I awoke on the ensuing morning, greatly refreshed by a night of unbroken slum-

ber; and, after I had breakfasted upon *tommy** and insipid coffee, the latter being served up in tin dishes, I fell in with a number of other recruits, and was marched to the hospital, to be inspected by the principal surgeon. This is a most trying ordeal to such as may have any symptoms of a cutaneous disease. As a necessary measure, they are at once incarcerated in a ward specially appropriated for persons having disorders of this description; and where a residence, for any period, however short, is by no means agreeable. But it was not my bad fortune to be consigned to this ward, or to make the acquaintance of its guardian angel, generally known by the *sobriquet* of Jack Skilly, a title given in consequence of his being the dispenser of skilly† to patients affected with diseases of the skin. What his original appellation was, I cannot say; and I am confident it would be necessary to refer to the muster-roll of his depôt, for accurate information on this head, so completely had the nick-name superseded the use of the name given him by his sponsors.

* This is the soldier's term generally for brown bread: that issued at Chatham was of the very worst description, and often so badly baked, that it would stick to a wall like paste.

† The military name for gruel.

CHAPTER III.

ATTACKED WITH FEVER AND GOES TO HOSPITAL.—MANNER OF AMUSEMENT THERE.—IS DISCHARGED, AND SENT TO DRILL.—DAILY ROUTINE OF DUTIES.—SEES A MAN FLOGGED.—CAUSES OF DESERTION AT CHATHAM.—ABUSES IN THE ARMY.—APPLIES FOR LEAVE TO PROCEED TO INDIA.—CHARACTER OF THE OFFICER COMMANDING THE DEPOT.

A FEW days after my arrival at Chatham I was attacked with fever, and became in consequence an inmate of the general hospital of the garrison, where I sadly missed the presence of those beloved relatives who had hitherto tended me in sickness; and I felt, it is indeed in the hour of affliction that the heart turns to home with the fondest regret, when we contrast the carelessness and indifference of strangers, with the assiduous kindness and fond attentions of a mother or a sister. Youth and a good constitution, however, proving my friends, in the course of a week I became convalescent; and was then permitted to leave my cot, and supplied with a suit of hospital clothes; no patient in military hospitals being allowed to wear his own, which are usually placed in a store on admission.

Having no books, I now amused myself in promenading the small space in front of the hospital, or by looking out of its upper windows, which commanded an extensive prospect over a rich tract of country, where the Medway

now expands itself into a miniature lake, and now winds along its sinuous course till it dwindles into a thread of silver at Sheerness, where it is lost in the ocean. It was certainly very pleasant in the calm summer evenings of June, to gaze out upon this scene; and to watch the tiny craft which shot here and there over the glassy surface of the river, their snowy sails but half filled by the soft breathings of the vesper breeze, on which the pennant of the guard ship floated boldly out against the clear blue sky.

Still one soon tires of even natural scenery, however beautiful; and as I could not walk all day long to keep away *ennui*, I was fain to pay an occasional visit to Jack Skilly's ward, the occupants of which afforded abundant matter for observation.

An elevation similar to a guard bed ran round this ward; on which, as there were neither beds or cots, slept the patients, whose only covering was a single blanket to each, thick with medicinal grease and dirt. Their principal amusement was pitch and toss, which was constantly going forward; quarrels as a matter of course frequently arose; and when these happened, off came the blankets, and the combatants pommelled each other *in puris naturalibus*, their fellow-patients crowding around like so many sooty dwellers in a Tartarus, and encouraging them to battle it out manfully. At meal times a general row frequently occurred, owing to some being desirous to secure the largest messes; and so desperate would the struggle occasionally become, that even Jack himself, though presiding genius of the place, dared not venture among them; his plan then being, to open the door sufficiently to allow of his thrusting in a mess, and closing it to as quickly as possible again.

I likewise contrived to while away an odd hour now and then, by conversation with the patients of my own ward; one of whom was an old veteran, who had seen considerable service in the East; and many were the stories he told me of his adventures there, and the dangers he had encountered in the Burmese country, and at Bhurtpore. This soldier likewise amused me in another way. He had a great antipathy to the orderly of the ward, who was also an old soldier and a Scotchman, because this person would not consent to bring him tobacco, the use of which is prohibited in hospitals. At first he used to do so, until he was reflected on by the other for being a feather-bed soldier, *i. e.* one who has not seen hard service; Sandy bitterly retorting at the time, "that he had never harrowed half as much as himself had pleugh'd:" and thus a quarrel originated, which had widened considerably at the period of my admission. Nothing would annoy the Scotchman more than a story the other would tell, about his being cupped in the head's antipodes, for scheming in hospital, by a surgeon called cup-the-beggar, from his constant use of these words. This, told with the most imperturbable coolness, would render the irascible northern furious; and he would return abuse in his native dialect, with such rapidity of utterance as to be unintelligible to his hearers.

At the expiration of the second week from my admission, I was discharged from hospital; and as my clothing meanwhile had been prepared, I returned to my barrack-room in undress uniform; so that I was now to all intents and purposes a soldier. On the ensuing morning I was sent to drill, with the club or awkward squad; our instructor being a corporal lately returned from India, who was as cross as possible at having been ordered to teach us; considering that more forward recruits should have been placed

under his care. Owing to this circumstance, nothing we did pleased him; and apart from having no taste for club winding, I was glad to make my escape in a few days out of his squad, and to get into one more advanced. As I was attentive, I soon became a sort of favourite with my new instructor, who placed me on the right flank of his division, which was the post of honour: and, indeed, owing to the kindness of this man, and his never using abusive language like others, my time during drill passed tolerably pleasantly, and I became somewhat reconciled to my new mode of life.

Probably some reader may wish to know the daily routine of my duties and amusements at this period. I rose at five o'clock in the morning, and made up my bed; which occupied at the least a quarter of an hour, and was rather a troublesome job. I then made my toilet, and at six turned out for drill, from which we were dismissed at a quarter to eight, when we breakfasted. From ten till twelve we were again at drill; had dinner at one, in the shape of potatoes and meat, both usually of the most wretched quality; and at two fell in for another drill, which terminated at four; after which hour my time was at my own disposal until tattoo, provided I was not ordered on piquet. During this period of leisure, I generally amused myself by strolling in the vicinity of the garrison (no soldier being permitted to go to a greater distance than one mile) or by reading; the owner of a circulating library in Rochester having consented to trust me with his volumes on my depositing a small sum in his hands. There was no garrison library then; which must be a matter of surprise to every one who knows of what benefit such institutions are to the soldier; who, having thus the means of amusement and instruction within his

reach, is in many instances altogether prevented from going to the beer-shop to pass his leisure time.

In this way, my first month at drill passed quickly by; its monotony wholly unrelieved except by one disagreeable occurrence, a man flogged. The sensations of pain and disgust I then experienced, will never be obliterated from my memory; nor was I singular in this respect, for many of the younger soldiers, and even some of the officers, fainted in the ranks, and had to be borne to the rear. The soldier flogged belonged to the 68th regiment, then quartered at Brompton; he had undergone a similar punishment a month before; and while his sentence was being read on that occasion, he pulled off his shako and jacket in sheer desperation, flung them on the ground, and declared he would soldier no more. After the execution of his sentence, on going to the hospital, he was placed in the prisoners' ward; and when he had recovered, was again tried for injuring his clothing, and mutinous conduct; and was sentenced a second time to receive 150 lashes. It is usual to get over a flogging affair as quickly as possible; but on this occasion the commandant, I was told, in order to protract the execution of the sentence, and thus increase the sufferings of the wretched man, ordered him to be flogged in slow time. This was certainly a refinement of cruelty quite worthy of a general officer, whose name will long be remembered by those who served in his brigade during a campaign in Affghanistan, as having carried discipline to such an excess that the spirits of his men all but sank beneath his iron rule.

The soldier was cut at the first lash, the blood trickling over the blue wheals on his back from the former flogging; nevertheless, he bore five other strokes of the cat without a murmur; but as the seventh descended upon his back,

he exclaimed in tones of deepest agony, which still ring in my ears, "Oh God!!! Colonel, forgive me, I will never do it again." I looked at the general to discover if a ray of pity marked his features; cold, stern and impassive, there was no sign of pity there;—eight counted the drum-major, and again the instrument of punishment descended upon the lacerated shoulders of the man, who soon after fainted, and underwent the remainder of his punishment in this happy state of insensibility.

At different periods since, I have seen many men undergoing corporal punishment; and habit has enabled me to look on scenes of this description now with indifference. Perhaps, too, my repugnance to flogging has been diminished, in some degree, by the feeling that it is partly a necessary evil in our army, consequent on the *matériel* of which it is principally composed; at the same time I feel confident that the power of punishment in this way might be exercised much more judiciously, and with greater benefit to the service, than it is at present.

During my stay at Chatham desertion was of frequent occurrence, and I understood to a greater extent than had ever been previously the case. This evil had its origin in a complication of causes, the major one being the manner in which recruits were treated on their joining, when not only was the bounty given them absorbed by the purchase of necessaries, but likewise the larger portion, and in many instances the entire, of the subsequent month's pay. Thus for two, or perhaps three months, the recruit would only receive two, at the most, threepence per diem; and young lads having good appetites, this trifling sum would be expended in procuring something by way of an evening meal, their ration meals only embracing a breakfast and dinner. Having accordingly no money to spend in amuse-

ment, and imagining they must continue to be similarly situated while in the service, young soldiers become quickly disgusted with it; and, when destitute of principle, desertion on the first opportunity followed almost as a matter of course.

There was also another cause tending to the same object, —the harshness with which recruits were treated, in numberless instances, by non-commissioned officers, who tyrannized over them with the greatest impunity. These having sufficient art to veil their true character from their superiors, whose favour they propitiated by officiousness and servility, adopted out of very wantonness a system of domineering towards new-comers, sheltering themselves in the ignorance of the latter as to military laws and usages. I have frequently heard it stated since by every class of soldiers, and my own experience leads me to be of the same opinion, that the generality of the non-commissioned staff at Chatham are morally the lowest and most contemptible of their grade in the service. It is a fact, of the truth of which I have myself been often a witness, that some of them are perfect adepts in every species of fraud,* and the larger part are of the most depraved habits otherwise—the necessary result of laxity of principle, and protracted stay in a vicious neighbourhood; for they would move heaven and earth were it possible, sooner than join their regiments (whose colours they had mostly never seen) on foreign stations.

It is indeed a curious circumstance, that under the very

* On my joining, I was made to pay for clothing, which I should have got gratis: at the time of my discharge I compelled the sergeant who paid the depôt then, and who is now pay and colour sergeant with the regiment, to refund the money he cheated me out of, by threatening to claim it before the board about to assemble for the purpose of recording my services, conduct, and cause of discharge. Others were treated in the same way who enlisted with me; but those died or volunteered in India, or were ignorant of what they were entitled to: at all events no claim but mine was ever made.

eye of the home authorities, the young soldier is perhaps worse treated than in any other part of the British dominions, both as regards his clothing and his food: even his scanty surplus pay, is frequently the object of the most scandalous peculation. He being altogether ignorant of what he is entitled to, and therefore obnoxious to every extortion, is plundered by those military blacklegs—those Majors Monsoon of the present period—with the greatest ease, and the least possible compunction. Aware of what must be the answer, they listen with indifference to the commandant, as he asks the recruit, when about to embark for India, whether he has any complaints to make. The reply to this question has been almost invariably in the negative. Indeed, few recruits, were they even aware of their being cheated, possess the ability and information requisite to make a report of a superior with any prospect of success; and otherwise, they become subject to trial by court-martial for making frivolous complaints.

One mode of depriving the recruit of his pay, is to give him an old shattered musket, easily injured; thus there are ten chances to one, that some part of it gets broken, while it is in his possession; and he has in consequence a round sum to pay on delivering it into the store, when leaving the garrison. I have known this to be the case with many persons, some of whom had to pay ten shillings for stocking an old musket in use for the past forty years, and the intrinsic value of which might be ascertained, by weighing the barrel, and calculating its worth at two-pence per pound. Whether such were ever stocked, is a question the armourer alone can decide; but in any case, he and the pay sergeants quietly arranged it all their own way.

Another method of deriving revenue from the occu-

pants of Chatham barracks, is by barrack damages; and the sum realised from time to time, in this way, must be enormous.

I was twice quartered in this garrison; the first time for six weeks, when the detachment with which I proceeded to India were charged tenpence per man; and the second time for four days, for which we were mulcted fourpence each. How injury to this amount could be done by us to our quarters, in so short a space, God and the quartermaster only know. There are usually about twenty depôts at Chatham, from each of which, at an average, one hundred men are annually sent to India; and estimating the barrack damages, charged to each man during the term of his stay, at one-shilling and sixpence, which I am certain is under the mark, we have a sum of 300*l.*, —a large sum indeed, to be deducted yearly from the shilling, the hard-earned shilling, of a few hundred soldiers.

Although my stay at Chatham was even unusually short, I was heartily glad when I received permission to accompany a draft ordered to India; a favour accorded me only on a special application to the officer commanding the depôt. This gentleman was curiously desirous of knowing why I was so anxious to join my regiment; but as it would not have been quite prudent to make him *au fait* of my motives, I held my peace.

He was indeed the last man in the garrison I should have made my confident, had even our relative positions admitted of such familiarity; for he was an officer never beloved by those under his charge, and many of the recruits would actually tremble before him on parade, so much did they dread him. He used frequently to visit the barracks; and woe then to the unlucky wight who

had a fold wrong in his bedding, a knapsack-strap out of its place, or his chin-strap fastened above the number on his forage cap; three days taps* being his ordinary punishment for offences of this character. Yet I have seen this officer, who was so strict a disciplinarian as regarded trivial matters, at a subsequent period, when he had become first major of his corps, unable to put the regiment through the manual and platoon exercise: while on another occasion, when an inspecting-general was on the ground, he could not find where the points were, when directed to dress them by his colonel.

There are many such in the service; men who strain at a gnat and swallow a camel; and consequently, our armies will never be destitute of a Braddock or an Elphinstone; in spite of our having a Marlborough in one age, and a Wellington in another, to remodel and mould them anew. England wants a 'polytechnique' school. She requires that merit, not money, should elevate men in her military service; and were this desideratum achieved, her troops would be indeed invincible. In the existing state of things, many creep in time of peace to the command of corps, by purchase or seniority, who are about as fit to lead a regiment as a peasant from the plough-tail is to turn courtier; their inability being never ascertained, until some capital *faux pas* is committed in front of an enemy, which sullies our national honour.

* Taps, in military parlance, mean that one answers his name every half-hour or hour to the sergeant of the guard, from reveille to sundown. In battalion corps, warning is given by beat of drum; in light infantry corps, a bugle sounds a peculiar call.

CHAPTER IV.

INSPECTED BY THE COMMANDANT.—DISORDERS DURING THE NIGHT.—MARCHES FROM CHATHAM.—EMBARKS AT GRAVESEND.—SEA NECESSARIES.—LOOSENING HAMMOCKS.—FORMED INTO WATCHES.—DEPRIVED OF BED-CLOTHES.—THE SHIP PUTS INTO PORTSMOUTH.—STANDS TO SEA AGAIN.—CONDITION OF THE SOLDIERS' WIVES.—IS STRUCK OFF DUTY.—MAKES THE ISLAND OF MADEIRA.—OCCURRENCES WHILE THERE.—ARRIVES IN THE HOT LATITUDES.—IMPROPER CONDUCT OF THE MEN.—CAUSES WHICH PRODUCE IRREGULARITIES ON BOARD SHIP.

JULY 9.—In the afternoon of this day, such of the depôt as had been selected to proceed out to their regiment, were inspected by the commandant; who told us, nothing could exceed our soldier-like appearance; a compliment which I was given to understand had been paid to nearly every draft of recruits which had left the garrison since the commencement of his command.

The inspection over, we deposited our knapsacks in a store, in order that there should be no making away of necessaries, in the interim of our marching out.

As evening wore away, disliking to remain in my barrack-room, where I expected all would be riot and confusion, I strolled through Chatham till night, when I returned; and a scene awaited me which exceeded any thing of the kind I could have imagined. Many of the men, aware that in consequence of their being on the eve of embarkation they could not be punished for minor

offences, had got drunk, and quarrelling and noise were the order of the night. The authority of the non-commissioned officers was insufficient to secure order; and one sergeant* left the barracks altogether, dreading some bodily harm; as he knew that he was generally disliked, owing to his own mean and tyrannous conduct.

About midnight, a report was made to the captain commanding the depot, of the disorderly conduct of the men; and that officer came in person to put a stop to their irregularities.

On his entering with this laudable intention, one of the rooms whence the greatest noise proceeded, a large tin dish, the repository for the plates and pots of the men of the apartment, was launched at his head in the dark.

Fortunately for himself, the captain was in no way remarkable for his size, and so the missile passed over his head without hitting him; otherwise, it must have put him effectually *hors-de-combat*, and caused his name to be placed foremost on the list of casualties for the ensuing month. As it was, he thought fit to make a speedy retreat, leaving the men to get quiet when they pleased.

Next morning, after a hurried breakfast at five o'clock, we fell in on the parade-ground, and were marched off to the store to get our knapsacks.

In another half-hour all were ready for starting; and the order, right form four deep, quick march, being given, our little column, as it defiled in front of the several

* The very language of this man teemed with pollution, and his expressions were sufficient to poison the mind of any young person. I have frequently come into contact with ruffians of the lowest grade; but he exceeded the veriest ruffian of them all; and only that he has been discharged, I would not hesitate a moment to make his name public.

squads now at drill, commenced cheering loudly. "Ah!" remarked an old soldier, as we passed through the gate, "You shouldn't cheer till ye were comin' back: there wont be so many of you then, I warrant, and they'll not be in a cheering humour."

After we had got beyond the works, the garrison, or as it was termed by us, the pongo-band, struck up a lively march, and we proceeded quietly onwards at a smart pace, till beneath Fort Pitt, when "Patrick's Day" was played, and a loud and prolonged cheer made the welkin ring again. This burst of national enthusiasm over (for the greater part of us were Irish), we marched along in silence. Arrived at Gravesend, we got into a lumber-boat, and were towed alongside of the *Gloriana*, a fine new vessel of more than one thousand tons burden, chartered for our conveyance to Calcutta. In a few minutes we had scrambled on board, and found our dinners already cooked, and after discussing the beef and potatoes, which constituted the meal, both of the best quality, we went upon deck to receive our sea-kits, which were given to us in canvas-bags, rendered waterproof, each secured with a leather strap and padlock. The latter, however, was of no use; for all being of the same size, a single key would unlock every one of them; a circumstance which led to a system of petty pilfering during the voyage, alike disgraceful and productive of disorder. A sea-kit consisted of two strong check shirts, two canvass frocks, a pair of blue cotton trowsers, and several other smaller articles, such as clasp-knife, soap, polish, &c., &c., &c., all necessary to a soldier on board ship.

Some two hours from our advent on board, the capstan was manned, and the anchor weighed, when all hands were directed by the first mate, who commanded the ship

in the absence of the skipper, to get into the rigging and give three cheers, an order which was duly and promptly obeyed.

This ceremony over, the paddles of the tug-steamer, which had already taken us in tow, were put in motion, and our long and dangerous voyage was commenced.

On the approach of evening, our hammocks were issued to us, and we set about lashing them shortly after, which was soon done, though not, as a sailor remarked, in a very ship-shape fashion. But a Roderick Random never experienced greater difficulty when getting into his hammock, than some of us did when getting into ours. Here a bulky fellow might be seen, who, having at length succeeded in clambering into his bed, came tumbling down again, the fastenings not having been properly secured;—there another sprang over altogether, and lit on his neighbour beyond, who, thinking he did so intentionally, began to pommel him forthwith, recruits being easily exasperated. Numberless were the blunders we made, and the ridiculous occurrences which took place; but at length all succeeded in getting safely stowed away, with the exception of some dozen or so, who, thinking they had now a fine opportunity of annoying their comrades, commenced loosening the fastenings of the hammocks, thus letting their occupants descend, whether they would or no, to the deck. A scene of uproar ensued, which lasted for a considerable part of the night, several being hurt prior to its termination. The morning found the greater part of us lying in all imaginable positions upon the deck; and divers were the complainings touching the catastrophes of the past night. The women and children, who were thoroughly frightened, had taken refuge in a corner, where they lay huddled together like a flock of scared sheep.

At an early hour the boatswain piped up all hammocks; and when I had placed mine upon the longboat, the nettings being full of spars, I went on the forecastle to have a look around; and found that we were off Dover, and sailing along with a light breeze which scarcely filled the heavier canvas. The vessel at this time must have looked very beautiful, as she was frigate built, newly painted, and had every sail, even to her tiny sky-sail, shook out. At eight o'clock we breakfasted on biscuit and tea; each man receiving a pint of the latter, which was very bad, owing to its being prepared in a large copper. Bad tea, destitute of milk, and biscuit, is an insipid meal to persons unaccustomed to such diet.

Breakfast over, we paraded on the deck, and a most unsteady parade it was; for at every roll of the vessel a section of us went to leeward, our sergeant-major finding it rather a difficult matter to tell us off into three watches, in conformity with the regulations for troops on board ship. One watch remains on deck from eight o'clock P. M. till twelve, and another from twelve till four; the third forming what is termed a dog-watch, which continues on duty all day, and goes on first the ensuing night. Each watch in its turn, with us, furnished the sentries over the cuddy; who were armed with cutlasses, as drafts of recruits are never supplied with muskets. At one o'clock we had dinner, after which nearly all of us were occupied in arranging our necessaries; and many were the squabbles which took place about the best situations for knapsacks until the evening, when we got our tea; soldiers being allowed this additional meal on board ship, although only paying sixpence per diem for their rations, including a pint of porter.

At eight bells, or eight o'clock, the watch to which I be-

longed went on duty; and I had to go upon sentry for the first time soon after. Midnight, however, quickly came round, the novelty of my situation causing the time to appear short; and it was now the turn of the watch next for duty to come on deck. But to get the men of it up, was of most difficult accomplishment; as in the first place they were fast asleep; and in the second, when awakened, they evinced no disposition to quit their warm quarters. At last, after much calling, the non-commissioned officers made their appearance; but none of the privates would answer their names, a sonorous and derisive snoring being alone responded.

Two bells went, we were still upon deck, and many were our grumblings at not being relieved. The sergeant-major now turned out, and fruitlessly endeavoured to get the watch to follow his example. He was at last about to report this circumstance to the officer, when a corporal offered to dislodge the recusants, which he effected by beating them fairly out of their hammocks with a piece of broken spar.

Chilled and comfortless as I was, I now gladly went below, anticipating a warm snooze in my hammock, despite the blankets being almost as coarse as hair-cloth, and having no sheets; but it was long ere I could find it in the dark, and when I did at last ascertain its whereabouts, my bed-clothes were flown. There was no use in complaining of my loss, as it would only afford matter for laughter to others; so I was fain to turn in without a word, resolving, however, to have a sharp look-out for the rogue in the morning.

When day had dawned I descended from my comfortless couch; and commenced a strict search for the articles missing, which I soon found in the hammock of a poor

imbecile, whom no one would like to have punished. Besides, I felt convinced this man was not the true delinquent, from his protestations of innocence, and the circumstance of the foot of his own hammock having been loosened, in which, nevertheless, I found the poor fellow fast asleep.

12th. In the evening we stood into Portsmouth, in order to take the skipper with a few passengers on board, and anchored off Spithead: and the scene which here met the view, was really beautiful, heightened as its effects were by the calm and glass-like appearance of the waters of the harbour, lit up by the yellow beams of a waning sun.

As I looked around in admiration, a dense column of smoke burst from the distant guard-ship, curling lazily upward through the sluggish atmosphere; and the report of the evening gun came booming heavily across the water, warning me, that it was time to sling my hammock, or my place might be taken up by another, in which case I should have to lie on the planking. This would be no very delectable couch, as, apart from its hardness, I should be trampled upon by the watches, as they went on deck or came below; so I dived through the hatchway with my sleeping-bag, tied it up and jumped into it, to sleep if I could, and prevent my blanket, &c. from being stolen for the night.

15th.—Having got the skipper and passengers on board, the anchor was weighed, and we stood out to sea. The wind, meanwhile, had shifted, and now blew right a-head, so that we were constantly tacking; being annoyed the while by the incessant shrill whistlings of the boatswain, and his hoarse cry of all hands to bout ship, a call

which some of us disliked, being obliged to pull the ropes during this nautical manœuvre.

As we approached the mouth of the channel, the sea became very rough, and the few women with the detachment were completely laid up with sea-sickness; their sufferings being augmented tenfold by the wretched way they had of lying. No sleeping-berths had been made for them, and they had only hammocks given them like ours; and it is very difficult (in some cases impossible) for women to get into these. The married people had, therefore, to lie upon the deck during the entire voyage; no small hardship, when it is remembered that a vessel in rough weather frequently ships seas, which come tumbling down the hatchways, setting all afloat below, and beds—if the dirty pallets of common cow-hair, such as is used in mortar, issued to us, might be so called—as a matter of course. There was not even a screen to separate their quarters from ours; a gross violation of common decency; and the poor women, lowly as their condition was, felt bitterly the indelicacy of their situation, and often murmured that their feelings should be thus outraged.

The government of India gives soldiers' wives a free passage to its territories, whether accompanying their husbands thither or going out alone to join them; and a very trifling additional expense would procure berths for them apart from the men; an arrangement which would prevent many an immoral and indecent occurrence on shipboard, alike disgraceful to the military service and to human nature. Convicts, if I mistake not, are kept separate; and why not the wives of soldiers, allowing none but their husbands or families to occupy the same apartment with them? Are soldiers, I would ask, less deserving of

consideration than criminals? One should think not: and until our rulers use the powers they possess, in encouraging morality and decent order, to a greater extent than they do at present among the lower grades of the army, the troops of the empire will still continue to be as vicious and as dissipated as they have hitherto been; and crime, as a consequence, be of the same frequent occurrence as now. It is in vain that every soldier is provided with a bible and a prayer-book, and that annual returns are supplied by regiments to the principal chaplain of the forces, to enable him to ascertain that they are so provided; if this Spartan indelicacy be forced upon women, the demoralisation of them and of the men must follow.

When clear of the Bay of Biscay, the weather moderated; and as the greater part of us, by this time, had got rid of sea-sickness, we began to enjoy the voyage; for our novel situation still prevented the weariness which so frequently settles upon landsmen at sea. Fortunately for me, the officer commanding now appointed me his writer, and I was accordingly struck off duty; and as a promise of a few rupees on arrival at India, induced a comrade to do my mess orderly,* I was freed from all manner of drudgery. This afforded me much gratification; and as I had provided myself with writing materials, and a box of excellent books having been put on board for the use of the men, my time passed tolerably pleasantly while daylight continued. Nor did I lack amusement in the evening; for then a few old soldiers with us, who had been in India for several years, would while away the period in the interval of hammock time, by their stories of that country, their services,

* The duties of a mess orderly are to get the meat, &c., and to perform all the necessary menial offices; it is taken a day in turn by each man of a mess.

&c. &c.; the groups of auditors which gathered round them on the forecastle, listening ever with eager interest to their relations of subjects so intimately connected with themselves; and although the days gradually grew shorter as we got into the higher latitudes, the circumstance was not productive of much regret to us, as our oracles continued sufficiently garrulous, and disposed to answer our queries. I was frequently amused by the tact with which a knowing wag would set the latter by the ears; an object he usually effected by asking one if such a thing was the case, and then after receiving an answer, putting the same question to another, whose reply was generally contradictory. He next managed to get the parties together, and by indirect means to render each aware of what the other had stated; when a battle royal was certain to ensue; both conceiving their credit would be tarnished, by abating one jot of what they had already advanced.

24th.—In the evening, land on the lee beam was sung out by a man aloft, and in a few moments the decks were crowded with soldiers, sailors, and cabin passengers; every eye being eagerly turned in the direction pointed out. But nearly another hour elapsed before we could see it; and then the island of Madeira, like a dense blue cloud, was discerned above the horizon. Night, however, soon came on and shrouded it from our view; but as we gradually neared it, lights became dimly visible, which grew more brilliant and distinct each succeeding moment. The aristocracy of the poop were soon busily occupied with their telescopes; and our carpenter, not to be behind them, produced his glass, and taking a post on the forecastle, was instantly surrounded by a circle curious for information.

This was given with no small air of importance, by his saying that one light came from a two story high hoose

(house), another from a wee place, and so on. I soon got tired of listening to chips* and went below. Shortly after midnight, the rumbling of the cable through the hawse hole, as the anchor was let go, awoke me from a heavy sleep.

Next morning on going upon deck, I found we were lying about a mile off Funchall, the capital of the island; which, commencing at the sea, ascends the base of a hill in successive terraces, till it scatters and loses itself amid vineyards, which extend to the summit of the acclivity.

The scene was of a character which one remembers with pleasure, being strikingly beautiful and picturesque, and rendered doubly interesting by the cloudless heaven which canopied it; from whence the glowing matin sun of the south beamed down on the fantastic rocks and vine-clad ravines, and on the calm pellucid sea, which girdled the island, rising abruptly from its bosom, with its waters of exquisite blue.

I regretted very much I could not go on shore—soldiers rarely being allowed an indulgence of this description—for the island is represented as very beautiful. The eye wanders over the most prolific vegetation, while nothing, it is said, can be more picturesque than the varied forms of the rocks or hills, or more lovely than the rich alluvial levels, which receive verdure and freshness from the many streamlets intersecting them. Still, despite its fertile soil and delightful climate, the islanders are poor people; even their little capital being principally inhabited by English merchants engaged in the wine trade.

At an early hour, boats came off from the town, laden with fruit, bread, &c., for sale; and in the purchase of these luxuries, the little money we had amongst us was

* Sailors apply this term very frequently to carpenters.

soon exhausted. We then commenced a barter with tobacco, which was eagerly sought after by the islanders; a few disposing of such of their necessaries to them, as they considered they should not want in India. This sort of traffic continued for the earlier part of the day, notwithstanding the posting of sentries on the gangways and at the portholes to prevent it, until it was at length brought to a sudden termination by a trick of the islanders themselves. Although they were strictly prohibited from selling wine to any person on board, they contrived to smuggle several bladders full of it through the portholes. The avidity with which these were purchased induced some of them, when their stock had failed, to fill others with salt water, which they sold for wine, and then pushing away immediately from the ship's side, they left their countrymen in the other boats to arrange the matter as they might with the sailors, on whom the fraud was perpetrated. The latter, on discovering the trick, flung bottles and other dangerous missiles at the remaining islanders; some of whom were severely cut; and although they loudly protested their innocence in broken English, they were soon compelled to push away from the vessel. A few good sized turtle were bought from these people, which were kept alive for a long time in tubs filled with salt water; they are very plentiful in the vicinity of Madeira, and several large ones swam past the ship while it remained at anchor.

In the evening, the skipper and a few of the passengers who had gone on shore returned, bringing with them a merchant and his wife about to proceed to India; and as it was for the purpose of having these persons as passengers we had touched at the island, there was no occasion for further delay; the ship's fiddler therefore mounted the capstan and scraped away, while the anchor was getting

up, and in a little time we were again out to sea. A few hours, and the island had sunk from our view behind a dark mass of intervening waters.

On the following day we had an inspection of necessaries; our commanding officer having been informed that we had bartered articles of kit with the Madeirans. This, however, as already stated, was only truth as regarded a few; and even these, it was ascertained, had but made away with trivial matters of no great utility; wherefore, in consequence of their stating that the articles had been lost overboard, all escaped punishment *pro. tem.*—nothing else occurring of any moment until the—

31st:—When the trade winds had wafted us far into the warm latitudes; and I now saw that singular inhabitant of tropical seas, the flying fish, shoals of which might be observed all day long, fluttering here and there over their proper element, from which they were scared but a few brief moments by their enemies. Enervated by the heat of the weather, the men of the detachment now got very lazy, and thinking they had no right to assist in working the ship, a few refused to pull a rope, when directed to do so by one of the mates, who immediately reported the circumstance to the commanding officer. The latter at once investigated the matter, and ascertaining that this conduct on the part of the men was more the result of ignorance and inexperience than of actual disposition to disobey an order, pardoned them for that time, on their promising there should be no repetition of the offence; being cautioned by him, that a second such occurrence would subject them to trial by court-martial.

Should these pages meet the eye of any young soldier, he would do well to remember, that while on board ship, (for he is almost certain of being there at one period or

another of his service,) it is his duty to assist in working the vessel upon deck. No one can require or compel him to go aloft, as this would be contrary to H. M. Regulations. Indeed, the little assistance a soldier can give in a ship, ought not to be otherwise than an amusement to him, and a help to diversify the dull monotony of life at sea; recollecting at the same time, that the more exercise he takes, the healthier he may expect to be. In any case, he must be an indolent, worthless fellow, whether civilian or soldier, who would refuse to pull a rope or man a capstan bar during a voyage of any length: setting aside the latter's liability to punishment for disobedience of orders. The soldier is just as liable to be tried by court-martial for improper conduct while at sea as when on land, although his duties are somewhat of a different character; and besides, it should ever be borne in mind, that willing and unhesitating obedience to an order from a superior, under every circumstance, and in every situation, is the first and greatest duty of a soldier; and should he even feel himself aggrieved, he is not supposed to complain until after the order is obeyed.

And here in justice I must say, that many officers are in the habit of delegating too much of their authority to the mates of freight ships, who are often men of little or no education, and excessively illiberal. Sailors in general dislike soldiers, and officers ought not to compel their men to come and go at the command of the mate of a petty merchant craft, whom they have no proper right to obey, and thus cause the numberless heart-burnings and murmurings which are ever the result. Merchant sailors will not obey the orders of a military officer; and why should soldiers be humbled to that degree as to be forced to obey the commands of a civilian, who is in many cases inferior

to themselves? I have known more than one mate presuming on the authority vested in them by negligent officers (who thus lessened themselves through their men) to compel soldiers to work, when the sailors almost to a man were lolling in their hammocks. Government, although it obliges soldiers to assist in pulling ropes, &c., for their own sakes, I feel confident never contemplated they should be domineered over by men of a different profession, who are not its servants, in order to please an officer who grows careless of his duty, because he had got from under the eye of a superior.*

This is one great cause of the irregularities committed by recruits when at sea; another is, their not having non-commissioned officers with them who know their duty. It is usual, when drafts of recruits are about to be sent to join their regiments, to make a portion of them non-commissioned officers; although such are equally inexperienced with their fellows, and generally destitute of that sense, firmness, and consistency of character requisite for the time, in lieu of a knowledge of their duties. Men thus promoted, or rather appointed, to speak more technically, only retain their ranks until their arrival at head quarters; when they again become privates, and are therefore termed in derision, pipe-clay sergeants, &c.

Owing to their ignorance of what is required of them, this class of non-commissioned officers are usually influenced by caprice in their dealings with the men, and are, in a majority of cases, totally unequal to the maintenance of that uniform order and strict discipline so necessary on board ship. Again, they are aware that on

* These remarks do not apply to any one then on board the *Gloriana*.

joining their corps they will become privates, and consequently be subjected to the licensed taunts and insults of those whom they may offend in the discharge of their duty during the voyage, who will not fail, when both are on the same footing, to retaliate real or imagined injuries in a tenfold degree. Their hands are thus weakened; and receiving only privates' pay until they reach India—a decided injustice—they cannot possibly feel any interest in doing their duty properly, even supposing that they thoroughly understood it. Were temporary sergeants permitted to retain even the rank of lance-corporal on arrival at their regiments, it would only be dealing fairly by them; while, at the same time, the circumstance would operate as a salutary check upon the bearing of the privates towards them, and remedy in part the evils resulting from their appointment.

Pay-sergeants are generally the persons who have the selection of non-commissioned officers for detachments, and these, when narrow-minded men, are invariably biassed in their choice by their own partialities, or those of other staff-sergeants. Consequently the most unworthy are often promoted; a fact which frequently came under my own observation; while good and intelligent men are neglected. Their appointments are, to be sure, ratified by the officer in command of the depôt; but as he from his limited intercourse with the men cannot in justice be expected to know much of individual character, he must depend altogether on the recommendation of his pay-sergeant, who, *ex-officio*, is constantly among the recruits, and therefore, unless very stupid or very negligent, must know them thoroughly. In the existing order of things, he is consequently the principal in culpa-

bility; and is guilty of not only acting in opposition to the dictates of his own judgment, but likewise of abusing the confidence reposed in him by his officer.

Some may consider that these are only trivial matters, in no way affecting discipline or the maintenance of a sound system of internal economy in the army, and consequently unworthy of being looked on in a serious light. But every one intimately acquainted with the soldier must admit, that on the non-commissioned mainly depends his well-being, and the upholding of discipline; for living with the men, he is acquainted with their faults and virtues, and is as it were, the necessary medium, through which the officer must view the bad and the good in their several characters. Such being the case, we must come to the conclusion that too much care cannot be exercised in the selection of even temporary non-commissioned officers; the question being next, how their appointment can be rendered subservient to the general interests of the service.

The Red Book distinctly makes the provision that a certain number of non-commissioned officers be sent home from time to time from corps on foreign service to their several depôts, for the purpose of acting as drill and pay-sergeants. This regulation has, however, only been partially carried into effect, though none could be more wisely framed; and to this circumstance is chiefly owing the existence of a Chatham staff, created by special authority, which dreads nothing more than the return of their regiments, except the joining them on foreign stations. Now, in addition to the provisions of the military statute being complied with—were two or three deserving sergeants to be annually sent home from each corps, after a stay of one or more years in England, they could return in rotation

with drafts of recruits in the capacities of acting sergeant-majors. Thus temporary non-commissioned officers, of which there must always be a portion with those detachments, would have a resource to fall back upon, should they need assistance or advice; and many irregularities, now of constant occurrence, would be prevented.

Were this done, and a better system adopted with regard to appointing sergeants and corporals for the voyage out, the young soldier would be benefited to a great extent; while at the same time an invaluable boon would be conferred on the deserving non-commissioned officer in India, who must be but too happy, even for his health's sake, to revisit his native country; and the additional expense incurred would be amply compensated for by the diminution of crime and irregularity. Every soldier who has made a voyage to India as a recruit will, I am confident, confirm these observations; and when long marches are to be performed on landing, detachments will soon learn the advantage of having an experienced sergeant with them, provided he is a honest man.

CHAPTER V.

CROSSING THE LINE.—IS BECALMED.—REMARKS ON THE PHOSPHORESCENT PROPERTIES OF MARINE BODIES.—CATCHES THE TRADE WINDS.—ACCIDENT DURING PRAYERS.—SAIL IN SIGHT.—ARRIVES IN THE CAPE SEAS.—ROUGH WEATHER.—CAPE BIRDS.—WEATHERS THE CAPE.—LOSSES SUSTAINED.

In the days of my boyhood, I had often heard and read descriptions of the ocean with deepest interest; for, living in a midland county, I had not then gazed upon its trackless waste of waters; and its mountain waves, its vast expanse, unfathomable depth, and monster inhabitants, were subjects for many a wondering conjecture, without once imagining I should find myself at any period launched upon its surface, with a long and perilous voyage before me. Such, however, was my lot. Thousands of miles already intervened between me and home; and the waters of the southern Atlantic were spread around, on which the vivid beams of a vertical sun descended with enervating powers, while the changes from cloud to sunshine, from storm to calm, alone gave variety to the scene.

The lot of the voyager, however happy his circumstances, is, indeed, one of hardship and privation; and yet it is a pleasant thing to be abroad upon the blue sea, and to see its bosom lit up by the soft, rosy hues of morning; or to watch the glowing sun of the tropics as its setting

beams tint sky and wave with gold. Were a Turner to look on the sunsets of those regions, he would throw aside his pencil as useless, and acknowledge that all his art could not depict them on canvas. Colours of the most surpassing brilliancy mingle in strangely beautiful variety in the firmament, while silver clouds with margins of richest crimson flit here and there lazily athwart the sky, or are heaped one upon the other in dark sluggish masses, through some vista of which a heaven of deepest azure is visible beyond, reminding one of the happy climes it veils.

10th August.—As we expected to cross the line on the ensuing day, it was arranged by the sailors, with the concurrence of the skipper, that the ceremonies usual on such occasions in honour of his ocean majesty, should be duly observed. Accordingly after nightfall, the sailor who was to personate Neptune got through a port-hole into the main chains, and hailed the ship in nautical phrase, a loud hilloa being responded by the boatswain's mate, when the son of Saturn announced himself, and was lighted up the vessel's side with blazing balls of oakum and tar. This part of the ceremony over, much amusement was created by bringing the hose used for washing decks to bear on the persons of the middies and such other greenhorns as chanced to be in the way; an operation specially directed by no less a personage than the boatswain himself, a bronzed and weather-beaten sailor, who evinced a decided love of fun, which did not, however, prevent his being an able and judicious seaman.

The shaving part of the ceremony has been too often described to need recapitulation here. It will suffice, then, to state that some subsequently took the tumble into the pool beneath with the most laudable patience; while

others, enraged at the treatment they were receiving, clung to the men who ducked them, in order that they might have a share of it themselves. But these fared the worst; for a sheepskin was thrown over their heads, which nigh suffocated them; until at last, exhausted with useless struggling, they submitted quietly to their fate.

The shaving over, their majesties danced a reel upon the quarter-deck, and were then drawn back in state to the forecastle, where the steward was already in attendance to issue a double allowance of grog. Thus terminated the sailors' parts. The soldiers, however, who had hitherto escaped scot free, as it would be rather a ticklish affair, from their number, for the tars to meddle with them, now commenced dashing each other with water, and I was pulled down by the legs from where I had ensconced myself in the rigging, and thoroughly soused. But the best part of the fun was afforded by one of our men, who had hitherto been missing, and whom, after much searching, we found behind his wife in a dark corner between decks. As he would not stir out of this, so much did he dread a ducking, buckets of water were brought down to throw upon him; but his wife seeing how matters were, valorously grasped her frying-pan, which chanced to be at hand, and cut such figures with it in front of her craven lord, who still crouched behind her, that what with laughter and dislike of encountering the Amazon, who appeared determined on protecting her husband, the fellow escaped. After indulging the risibility excited by this occurrence until we were all heartily tired, we shifted our wet clothes, and night coming on in a little time terminated a day the merriest we had had since we embarked.

14th.—The trade winds had now deserted us, and we were at one time becalmed, and at another sailing slowly

along before the light variable winds usual to this part of the ocean, occasional heavy showers making our situation comfortless in the extreme. The water which came down the hatchway, and the wet clothes of the men coming off duty, rendered between decks excessively damp: and as the ports could only be opened on a very calm day, the heat and vapour resulting from those causes, and the breaths of some hundred persons crowded together in a narrow space, were almost intolerable. Excessive perspiration brought on the prickly heat, a red pimple which breaks out all over the person, and is productive of extremely unpleasant sensations, which nothing but cool, dry weather can remove. Our situation was made still more uncomfortable by our not being able to get our clothes dried after we had washed them; and thus cleanliness, so necessary to health in a warm climate, was prevented.

This unpleasant state of things did not, however, deter some of the ill-disposed from making a constant practice of letting go the hammocks of their sleeping comrades, several of whom were hurt in this way; and although reports were frequently made of these occurrences, from the inefficiency of the non-commissioned officers none of the delinquents were ever detected. The sergeant-major himself was cut down, and well-nigh had his head broke; and one poor, simple fellow could scarcely ever hang up his hammock without his getting a tumble; as a last resource he went to sleep with a fellow simpleton, but both were let fall together, and very much hurt. Another trick was to tie a cord to a sleeper's great toe, which was termed cramping, and pull it till he was dragged out of his hammock. Besides those annoyances, scarcely a day passed over without a battle taking place; at first the better disposed used to part the combatants, but finding it was use-

less to endeavour to prevent squabbles in this way, they took another course, and encouraged them to pommel each other while they could; and the result was that the same parties never fought a second time, and fewer quarrels occurred.

18th.—I had frequently, during the preceding part of the voyage, noticed that singular and beautiful phenomenon, the luminous appearance of the sea at night. I now, however, witnessed it to a greater extent than at any time before; the bows and sides of the ship being completely wrapped in a blaze of phosphoric light. From the same cause, the crest of each wave presented the appearance of a globe of palish fire, and these, scattered around in every direction, produced a wild and beautiful effect; even the courses of the fishes which gambolled about the vessel were distinctly discernible by long evanescent lines of flame. The previous day had been showery, and the night was close, and the heat very oppressive; to this state of the atmosphere must have been owing the brilliancy and unusual extent of the phenomenon, for during several subsequent voyages, I have never seen the luminous appearance so intense as after or immediately before rain, when the air was highly charged with electric matter. How these causes may affect or influence marine bodies is a question sufficiently curious for consideration by philosophers.*

* There has been much diversity of opinion regarding the phenomenon, from the days of Pliny down to our own enlightened times, in which philosophers have not agreed as to the causes whence it originates. Some suppose it to be a property inherent in saline liquids themselves, emitted in consequence of friction by bodies passing through it, such as ships, fish, &c. &c.; others think it is caused by putrescent animal matter with which they contend every part of the ocean abounds. A third class maintain that this luminous appearance is the result of a property of phosphorescence or the power of emitting light at will, similar to that possessed by a portion of the

21st.—In the morning we caught the southern trades, and the yards were immediately braced, sharp fore and aft, as the object is to run as close to this wind as possible. The day proved beautifully fine, and it being Sunday, as was customary in fair weather, preparations were made for divine service. A union jack was spread over the capstan, which was used as a reading-desk by the minister—for we had such a personage on board as a passenger—and seats were formed by placing spars or capstan bars upon buckets. Up to the present period, these spars, &c., had answered this purpose to admiration; but unluckily now, from being close-hauled, the vessel was lying very much over, and chancing to give a severe lurch during prayers, away went seats, buckets, and the bulk of the congregation to leeward; greatly to the amusement of some young ladies, whose chairs had been lashed, and who indulged their cachinnatory propensities very indecorously, while the middies ensconced on the poop hastily retreated towards the wheel, that they might give their risibility full scope, away from the dreaded ken of the skipper.

During the ensuing week the weather became delightfully cool and pleasant, and owing to this circumstance the prickly heat totally disappeared from amongst us. Each day now was the exact type of the one preceding, there being no change of wind or weather, and consequently

insect tribe, which is common to all marine animals, and sea water, it has been proved by numerous experiments, abounds with minute creatures, which exhibit this light when alarmed by the rushing of any thing through their native element, the plash of an oar, &c. It is further stated that this property is given to fishes for the purposes of attack, defence, or escape, as they invariably exist by preying on one another, and a large proportion during the night. Besides, the transmission of light through sea water diminishes in so rapid a ratio, that at the depth of 1000 feet there is total darkness, and as fishes have been drawn up from a much greater depth than this, it is evident they could not exist without the aid of a phosphoric property.

no shifting of sail; and every succeeding morning found us in the same course, running along upon a taut bowline, and every riper sun shone on the sailors working lazily on the decks, and on the soldiers scattered in every direction, engaged in reading, smoking, or sleeping in the shade of the mainsail. Thus the daily routine of our existence at this period, was of the most monotonous character, no one incident occurring to diversify it, until at length came round the

28th:—When in the evening a sail on the weather-bow was called out by a sailor forward. The words operated like an electric shock; the sleepers sprang to their feet as if touched by the wand of a magician, and rubbed their eyes; the readers flung aside their books without noting the page they were at; the smokers hurriedly thrust their pipes into their pockets, and inquired, "Where is it?" the mates levelled their glasses at the stranger; and the officers who had telescopes, ran below to fetch them.

All was excitement; a delightful and novel sensation to us; and every one was eager to learn what sort of craft the vessel was, as if the knowledge was of the last importance; even the amiable old lady of our excellent commanding officer, took her turn at a glass in order to have a peep at the stranger, which seemed in the distance like a tall pillar rising out of the sea, for she was running right before the wind.

"Can you make her out, Mr. ——?" said the skipper to his first mate. "No, sir," was the response, "her masts are all in one yet. Ah! there, her hull is above the water line, she is English, sir, at all events, and there goes her signals up, she wants to speak to us." "Very good, Mr. ——, let the boatswain pipe up all hands to shorten sail."

In a little time a noble bark was alongside, and it was a pretty sight to see the two vessels, about fifty yards asunder, with their heads lying the same way, bowing and curvetting to one another, like things of life, as wave after wave plashed against them. Every voice was hushed as the customary enquiries were made, until the mutual farewell traversed from ship to ship, when a confused and indistinct hum arose, as each commenced speaking of the stranger, whose sails were rapidly shook out as she was laid into her proper course. Gradually she receded from us, and we gazed with something of a melancholy feeling after her—as one gazes on a departing acquaintance whom he has suddenly and unexpectedly met in the wilderness—until at length her tall masts had sunk beneath the horizon.

September 6th.—We were now as far as 32° south latitude; the trade winds had deserted us, and at one time we found ourselves becalmed, and at another, scudding along under double-reefed topsails in a squall, rapid transitions from cloud to sunshine being of constant occurrence, so changeable is the weather in those seas.

On one occasion, a bright morning glowing with promise of a fine day, and a light pleasant wind, induced the first mate to get the ship under a perfect cloud of canvas, when suddenly a dark spot became visible above the horizon, which gradually expanded itself athwart the heavens. A heavy squall was approaching, and it was considered necessary to inform the skipper, who was at breakfast at the time, how matters were. He instantly took his station on the poop, and ordered the boatswain to pipe up all hands to take in sail, and yet, although the crew was a good one, and the soldiers gave every assistance in their

power, still there was barely time to make all tolerably tight aloft, when the squall came whistling through the rigging with tremendous fury.

Before the squall came on, the sea was only slightly agitated, and it was curious to mark its progress towards us, by a long perpendicular wave or wall of water, which it drove before it, and from which frequent showers of spray plashing upwards, gave sure indication of dangerous excitement.

At another time, I was watching from the forecastle the hissing element beneath, as it was rapidly parted by the prow of the vessel, going about nine knots an hour, when the wind lulled for a moment, and then chopped round right a-head, taking all the sails aback. The ship remained motionless for nearly the space of a minute, when she heeled about as she answered her helm, darting off like a stricken deer, at right angles with her former course, fortunately without sustaining any injury; a circumstance, owing, it was said, to the cleverness of the man at the wheel. Squalls and sudden shiftings, or rather counter-currents of wind of this character, are very frequent in this part of the ocean, and productive of much danger, unless due precaution is exercised. In rainy weather especially, they are to be apprehended.

16th.—We had now got far into the Cape Seas, and during the last few days, had encountered several smart gales, which somewhat prepared us for the severe storm which occurred on the preceding night. I had turned in at the usual hour, after hearing an old sailor prognosticate a coming storm from the lurid and angry appearance of the sun as it set, and the dark heavy clouds which obscured the firmament in every direction. About midnight, I was awakened by a horrible din on the deck overhead,

and jumping hastily out of my hammock, I clambered up the hatchway to ascertain its cause. Nothing could exceed the noise and confusion fore and aft: the skipper was bellowing orders in rapid succession through his speaking-trumpet, while the shrill whistle of the boatswain, mingled wildly with the hoarse roarings of the tempest, and in addition, the cries of the seamen, the rushing of mountain waves, the flapping of heavier sails, and the creaking of masts and timbers, formed a combination of sounds in that hour of pitchy darkness, truly appalling. For a time our situation was a critical one, as the vessel was thrown nearly on her beam ends, and the huge waves washed over her now and then, dashing us to leeward, as we pulled at the ropes; but she gradually righted, as sail after sail were taken in, and we were soon drifting before the wind, with only a solitary storm stay-sail set.

A storm by day is sufficiently terrific and sublime, though objects are then seen distinctly, a circumstance which considerably lessens the feeling of danger; but at night, when darkness has shrouded the deep, and moon and star are obscured by impervious masses of raven cloud, then indeed is the voice of the tempest terrible over the boundless expanse of the ocean.

It blew great guns, in sailor phrase, for better than two hours, when the wind settled down into a stiff breeze, and our ship, which rode it out gallantly, was again laid into her proper course. The moon now emerged from behind the clouds, which had hitherto hid it from the eye; its pale and gentle beams descending like harbingers of peace, to light the angry waters, which swelled into ridges of enormous height capped with foam, dark and fearful chasms intervening as if yawning to engulph us. Scenes of majesty such as this richly repay the voyager for the

hardships and privations he has to encounter. The mind is wrought up to a pitch of enthusiastic admiration as the storm lulls at the mandate of its sovereign, and the luminaries of heaven shine sweetly forth from their dwelling-places, with peaceful promise, and seemingly as if to gaze in very pity on the ruin which their lights perchance reveal.

During the ensuing week, the weather was rough, and our situation was therefore most uncomfortable; it frequently happened when we would be squatted on the deck at our meals, that the ship gave a lurch, and away went mess tins, buckets of pea soup, and men to leeward; scalded legs and bruises being things of every day occurrence.

A variety of birds of the class Palmipedes,* usual to the Cape seas, were now our constant companions. The largest of these was the white or wandering albatross, sometimes called the Cape sheep by sailors, who formerly used to reckon it an offence ominous of danger to themselves to injure it. On this superstition is founded Coleridge's exquisite poem of the "Ancient Mariner." This feeling has however ceased to exist; and the albatross is now frequently caught with a baited hook as it swims in the wake of the vessel, and killed without compunction. Next to the albatross, the petrel attracted our attention. This little bird bears some resemblance to the swallow, and like it, skims over the surface of the water, on which it can support itself by striking rapidly with its feet; and hence they have been compared to St. Peter, and have got the name of peterel,† or petrel.

* When in the British Museum, on my return to England, I did not see a single Cape bird among the specimens there.

† The French call them petit Pierre—little Peter.

During calm weather, they usually sleep or swim about on the surface of the sea; but on the approach of a storm, or in rough weather, fly above it; and as it is seldom seen unless on the latter occasions, it has become an object of dislike to sailors, who consider its appearance as invariably denoting a coming tempest.

25th.—By this date we were clear of the Cape seas, where we encountered several very heavy gales, in addition to the one already described, during which our main-sail was torn to pieces, and we lost the flying jib-boom, and a top-gallant spar. But these were mere trifles, and we thought ourselves fortunate in the extreme in faring so well during our passage through those blustering seas of the Cape, called by Diaz, Cabo Formentoso (Stormy Cape,) a name altered to its present one by his master, John II. of Portugal, who felt confident that the passage to India was at length discovered.

CHAPTER VI.

MAKES THE BAY OF BENGAL.—DIET ON BOARD SHIP.—ARRIVES OFF THE SUNDERBUNDS.—CALMS: FEELINGS DURING THEM.—MISSES THE LIGHT SHIP.—GETS A PILOT.—LAND IS SEEN.—RIVER GANGES.—ANCHORS OFF CUDGEREE.—BARTER WITH NATIVES: THEIR APPEARANCE.

OCTOBER 1st.—In the morning we caught a fine lively breeze, which wafted us along at the rate of ten and eleven knots an hour. This wind continued until we had arrived within the tropics, when lighter and more variable breezes succeeded it. Still we got on tolerably well; and after what might be termed a capital run, made the Bay of Bengal; so there was now every prospect of our long voyage soon terminating, which afforded us much pleasure. An additional subject for congratulation on our part, was the excellent health all of us, with two or three exceptions, had enjoyed during the voyage, which was principally owing to our having sufficient room between decks, and the rations issued to us being of the very best quality. Nothing could have been more judiciously framed than the scale of victualling for troops on board ship. Beef, flour, and preserved potatoes were served out to us on Sundays and Thursdays, pork and peas on Mondays, Wednesdays, and Saturdays. We had pudding, or as it is termed, "duff," on Tuesdays, and rice and pre-

served soup on Fridays. Thus there was a continual change of diet, than which nothing can be more essential to health on shipboard ; indeed, if the liberal provisions of Government with regard to a soldier's rations at sea are fully carried out, there is little danger of sickness under ordinary circumstances. The lime-juice, vinegar, and mustard issued to us effectually prevented scurvy, a single symptom of which did not appear during the voyage. Water was the scarcest necessary with us, owing to the manner in which it was issued, and not to any insufficiency of quantity. Each mess of six men got their allowance daily in a keg, and this was soon drank; one fearing another might get more than his own share, and so resolving to make sure of what he considered belonged to himself in time, not generally because he was thirsty, but for fear he might be so. The best plan for serving out water to troops at sea is to put the day's allowance for the whole in a cask on the main deck, with a sentry over it, who may permit every one to drink as much as they please, but let none be carried away. When this has been done, I never knew men to drink the quantity they were entitled to.

Here, while I acknowledge that the rations, &c. for the troops on board the *Gloriana* were of the most excellent quality, I cannot too strongly reprobate the manner in which the two or three sick with us were treated. They never received fresh provisions, and had therefore to subsist on salt diet, the same as issued to the men in health. One of them, who had a disease to which salt meat is poison, and who died shortly after his arrival in India, from the bad treatment he had received while at sea, frequently told me that he was sure the diet he was obliged to use would kill him; and that if he was taken into the

general hospital at Calcutta, he would report to the head doctor there the manner in which he had been treated. We had no military surgeon with us, and the ship's doctor, although paid for doing so, could have but little interest in looking after our sick.

When we had arrived off the Sunderbunds—the term applied to the numerous creeks and channels forming the delta of the Ganges, which extends along the sea-coast of Bengal, for a distance of 180 miles—we were completely becalmed; an occurrence irksome in the extreme when a long voyage is near its termination. At such a time every one, from the captain to the cabin-boy, sailors, as well as soldiers, long to exchange privations and a crowded situation, for plenty of fresh provisions and the liberties of an on-shore life: so all of us were equally restless and uneasy, and earnestly wished to see the ship safe in harbour; and the voyage, which had already extended to nearly four months, concluded. But wishes and longings were of no avail, and the vessel lay like a log upon the water for nearly a week, until at length a light breeze sprung up, when every sail from stansail to royal was shook out to benefit as much as possible by it. On the approach of the evening this beautiful breeze died away; and the current and tide being both against us, we drifted back during the night to where we had sailed from in the morning. In this way we went ahead by the day, and were carried out to sea again by night, for the better part of a week, until at last the skipper adopted the laborious expedient of casting anchor in the evenings; but after the lapse of two days, the wind died away altogether, and so we were once more stationary. Never was a breeze longed for more anxiously than it was now; even the

witching practice of whistling for wind was had recourse to; and many a look of intense interest was cast upon the horizon at morn, noon, and night, to ascertain if there were any symptom of one. But morning and evening brought no change with them; the heavens still had the same cloudless aspect; and it is impossible to describe the feeling which was fast settling upon us in consequence.

The weather at this time was excessively warm, and many of the men, unable to remain below during the night, would steal up to the forecastle and lie down in order to sleep more comfortably. Like others, finding it impossible to rest between decks, I went thither after we had been becalmed for a few days; and feeling no inclination to sleep, stood beside the larboard cathead, and watched listlessly down upon the quiet water beneath, until it was midnight. The sailors and soldiers singly, or in detached groups were lying around, and not a sound broke upon the stillness of the hour, save the monotonous tramp of the sentinel, the heavy breathings of the sleeper, or the sudden exclamation of the dreamer, whose slumbering fancies perchance brought him back to the joyous scenes of his childhood, or to the maturer yet no less sunny days of halcyon boyhood. While engaged in contemplating the scene thus presented to my view, I fancied I heard a low moaning sound in the distance, and looking intently in the direction whence I thought it proceeded, I saw a small cloud, which increased rapidly, until it had spread itself athwart the horizon in that quarter, while at the same time the noise which first caught my attention became louder and more distinct every succeeding moment. A breeze, indeed, had at length sprung up, and it was its joyous boundings over the deep sea which I had heard. Pre-

sently tiny sheets of foam began to sparkle in the bright moonshine, while on board the ship the late quiet and inanimate scene had been suddenly changed, as if by the wand of some eastern magician, into one of extraordinary bustle and activity. Some sails were shook out, others clewed up, and ropes belayed in a space of time surprisingly short; and in a few minutes the vessel was ready for the breeze, which shortly after rattled through her rigging, impelling her forward as if suddenly gifted with Promethean animation. The wind at first blew rather stiff, but it soon tempered down into a gentle breeze, which bore us pleasantly along.

On the ensuing morning the aspect of the several faces which met the view was totally different from that which had characterised them on the previous day; a look of gladness had succeeded to one of gloom and despondency, and every heart was brimful with the anticipated pleasure of soon being safe and sound once more on *terra firma*.

2nd November.—As we approached Sand's head,* the sea became completely discoloured, owing to the great body of water poured into it by the Hoogly branch of the Ganges. The navigation of this part of the bay is dangerous in the extreme, as the water shoals in some places on the bar to the depth of a few feet at low tide. To prevent accidents, light ships are placed along the only safe channel, and a pilot brig is always cruising beyond the outer one, with pilots on board to take vessels up the river. By some mischance our skipper during the night missed the light-ship, which was productive of much general anxiety, as it was soon ascertained by the

* The name given to the bar of sand across the mouth of the Hoogly branch of the Ganges.

lead that the water was shoaling very fast. The signal for a pilot, a light at the fore-yard arm, had already been hung out; and as our situation became more and more critical, two guns were fired, and blue-lights burned. Still the pilot-brig could not be seen, and there was no doubt of our having got upon the bank, as the water was growing shallower every moment, and much apprehension was entertained that we should soon strike. By this time every soul in the ship was on deck: the poop was crowded with the cabin passengers, while soldiers and sailors were thickly mingled together on the forecastle, or on the hammock nettings. Conversation was carried on in almost inaudible whispers, and the blue lights burning at intervals, shed a lurid glare with singular effect on the various groups of anxious faces which they lit up. The scene was one of a strangely deep and thrilling character to us, heightened as it was by a consciousness of propinquity to danger. It was, indeed, of that sort which makes a deep impression on the mind, and which is not easily forgotten in after life.

Midnight approached; still no one thought of going below; and the silence, unbroken save by the signal guns, now became appalling. In a little time the water had shoaled to eight fathoms, and the order was given to clear away the cables in order to cast anchor; it was promptly but silently obeyed. At this juncture the second mate who was aloft, sung out, "A light on the lee-beam." "Can you see the craft?" hastily asked the skipper. "Distinctly," was the reply. "Can you make out what she is?" he again inquired. "A brig, sir." "All hands to bout ship then," shouted the skipper, and in a little time we were standing towards the stranger, about whose character however, much uncertainty prevailed; but a blue light

being burned, the next moment a similar light illuminated her sides and rigging, when the joyous exclamation of "The pilot brig! the pilot brig!" burst from every lip.

In less than half an hour we were within hailing distance, and the customary inquiries over, a light was seen descending with the brig's boat as it was lowered to the water, and the next minute we heard the measured plash of oars as it was impelled towards us. The boat was soon alongside, for we lay with our sails aback, and the much-wished for pilot, accompanied by a tall pale youth with a hat which might serve for an umbrella, and a native servant, stood upon the quarter-deck of the *Gloriana*. The pilot at once took the ship in charge; a feeling of perfect security now arose in our minds; and the various groups gradually broke up as individual after individual retired for the night, until at length the decks were in possession of the usual watch.

3rd.—At an early hour I went upon deck to feast my eyes upon the land which I expected would be in sight; as yet, however, it was not visible, although we had got inside the outer light ship. While watching on the forecastle a large turtle swam by, a few inches below the surface of the water, with several black and spotted snakes.

At eight o'clock land ahead was shouted by the look-out aloft, and every eye was instantly turned in that direction. Another hour, however, elapsed before any sign of it could be seen from the deck; and then the tops of trees were dimly discerned in the distance, and soon after the low flat land of Sagor,* or, as it is sometimes called, Tiger Island became visible. In a short time we

* At this island until 1802, when government prevented the practice, pilgrims used to sacrifice themselves or their children to the sharks and alligators which abound in its vicinity.

were fairly in the Hoogly river, the name given by Europeans to the most western branch of the Ganges, while by the natives it is termed Bhagirathi or true Ganges, and is therefore esteemed by them as peculiarly sacred.

In eastern mythology the Gunga or Ganges, so designated from flowing through Gung, the earth, is described as the eldest daughter of the great mountain Himavata. With respect to the source or origin of their sacred river, the Brahmins state that it issues from the root of the Boohjpootre tree through the semblance of a cow's mouth in stone, and flows thither directly from heaven, or the residence of those beings whose spirits have undergone the most happy transmigration, which they say is veiled with clouds on the summit of the Himalaya. This poetical superstition has probably been caused by the source of the Ganges never having been discovered; no traveller being able to ascend the mountains whence it is seen tumbling down, a mere rivulet from beneath beds of eternal snow.

The Ganges, like the Nile, has its annual inundations, and sometimes rises in the rainy seasons to a perpendicular height of twenty-five feet, when at many places it resembles the sea in extent, the eye not being able to discern an opposite bank. On its course to the sea it receives various tributary streams, until it separates into branches about 200 miles from the bay, into which it falls. The Hoogly is the only one of these which admits large vessels, although by no means pouring the greatest body of water into the sea; the current in the other branches not being sufficiently strong to clear away the bars of sand from their mouths.

The wind was right ahead as we entered the river, and obliged us to tack every half hour, the channel being scarcely a mile in breadth. On the approach of evening,

we cast anchor off Cudgeree, and the letter-boat at this place shortly after came alongside, with the dâk wollah seated in its stern, under an awning. The natives' manner of rowing struck me as extremely singular. They were squatted like tailors on a deck, even with the rim of their boat; and as they dipped their paddles in the water, rose simultaneously to about the height of a foot, thus giving alike their weight and strength to every pull. Their paddles did not play in rowlocks, but were tied to uprights, placed along the edge of the boat; and it was astonishing to see the rapidity with which they impelled it against the current and tide, animating each other by a loud gutteral cry.

The skipper, we understood, had written to Calcutta for steam, as, without its aid, it was useless to think of getting a large vessel like ours against the current. Off Cudgeree, therefore, we must remain until a tug-boat came to pull us up; and there was no knowing, the sailors said, when it would arrive; some even stated a week might elapse before it came. Feverish as I was from impatience to be on land, the prospect of a lengthened detention in the river was no way cheering, and so in despair I resolved to turn in and sleep, if possible, like an Esquimaux.

Next morning, having slept away the edge of my chagrin, I resolutely determined to bear with this new evil like a philosopher, and amused myself by watching the boats of the natives as they came alongside, or glided noiselessly past. We soon commenced bartering knives and other articles, no longer of use to us, for sweet biscuit and fruit: the natives, as a matter of course, making the best bargains: still we managed to procure a tolerable stock of cocoa-nuts, plantains, &c. &c. Oranges and pine-apples we had nothing to say to, as they are very injurious to persons after

a voyage, and should never be eaten, as they almost invariably cause flux.

There is something striking and singular in the appearance of the Hindoostanees, when one sees them for the first time. Their dark and glossy skins, their bare heads (when of a poorer caste), and bodies destitute of clothing, with the exception of a piece of cotton cloth folded about the loins and passed between the legs, cause some surprise to the European. Ladies, in most cases, are very much shocked when they suddenly find themselves among them. Habit, however, and the dark skin of the natives soon enables them to look on the latter with the most perfect *nonchalance;* and in a few days after their arrival at Calcutta, we find them usually surrounded by a swarm of half clad domestics, whose services the luxurious manners of the Anglo-Indian capital render indispensable.

The day, which passed pretty quickly under existing circumstances, at length waned away, and the boats left us and made for the banks.

A silence still and unbroken now succeeded to the busy hum of voices, the gutteral exclamations of the natives, and the impatient ones of ourselves whenever we could not divine their meaning by signs or otherwise. Another night went by and another morning dawned, and many an eye was turned up the course of the river to ascertain whether a steamer was approaching, but no friendly wreaths of smoke in the distance were discernible.

CHAPTER VII.

PROCEEDS UP THE RIVER.—ARRIVES AT CALCUTTA.—DISEMBARKS.—DESCRIPTION OF FORT WILLIAM, CALCUTTA, &C.—BAD CONDUCT OF THE DETACHMENT.—REMARKS ON THE NATIVE TROOPS.

The bell tolled three o'clock. Tired with looking at the banks of the river and the boats of the natives, I went below, and throwing myself on the bench which ran around our apartment, took up "Charles O'Malley," and soon found myself in the heart of Connaught.

Scarcely however had I got there, when a cry of "Here's the steamer! here's the steamer!" caught my ear. It operated like an electric shock, and in a moment the forecastle was crowded; a dark column of smoke rolling heavily upwards beyond a bend of the river being all that could as yet be seen.

In a little time, after rounding an intervening point, a small steamer was seen bearing down rapidly towards us, and various were the conjectures now made as to what ship she was coming to tow up. Some declared she was the identical craft the skipper had written for, whilst others maintained that this could not be the case, sufficient time not having elapsed, and that she was coming to tow up some other vessel, there being several in the river.

To our great joy, however, the tug-boat came

on steadily towards us, until within speaking distance, when her master inquired if we wanted steam. The pilot answered in the affirmative, adding that we would not move until the next morning. As this did not suit the convenience of the other party, the steamer's head was put about in order to run down the river in search of another vessel, and thus our hopes of soon reaching our destination were blasted in a moment. The skipper, however, now resolved on moving at once, and the pilot hailing the retiring tug-boat, she wore round, and anchored ahead of us, and in another hour the tow-ropes were secured, the anchor weighed, and we were ascending the river.

We frequently approached close to either bank, and were thus enabled to get a distinct peep at the villages of the natives, which were half hid among groves of cocoa-nuts and palm-trees. No country could be more beautiful, and, apparently, of more prolific vegetation, and were it diversified with hill and dell, it would be almost a Paradise. Every little creek was shaded by umbrageous trees, so as to resemble an arbour, and through the groves which lined the banks, fields of yellow corn were visible at intervals, which reminded one of home.

After sunset, we again cast anchor, the steamer slipping her two cables, and imitating our example. When the usual hour of repose came on, every one contentedly retired, aware that ere another twenty-four hours had passed, the capital of British dominion in the East would be seen. We were now but sixty miles distant.

At daylight next morning, the anchor, which had been cast in eight fathom water, was weighed, and we commenced ascending the river, at the rate of four miles an hour. This day, like the evening of the preceding one,

was spent in gazing on the beautiful scenery along the banks; until at length the setting sun flung its golden tints on the broad stream, and the short twilight of an Indian evening faded before the deeper hues of night. But the loss of the brilliant beams of day was amply compensated for by the lovely moon that soon after arose, causing the river to appear, beneath its witching influences, like a wide sea of molten silver, on which every mast and rope of the vessel, as in a vast mirror, were distinctly reflected. Two hours after night had fallen, we got to Garden Reach, the most beautiful spot in the neighbourhood of the capital, and by nine o'clock we had cast anchor off Fort William. "So at last," thought I, as the chain rumbled through the hawse-hole, "we are at Calcutta." The mingled sounds of life usual to a great city were borne gently by on the night breeze, while at intervals, high above them rose the shrill screams of the jackall which painfully reminded one of the cry of an infant.

7th.—At an early hour I went upon deck, and certainly the prospect that now burst upon my view was a noble one. There was Calcutta standing on the left or eastern bank of the river, with its spires and minarets lit gorgeously up by the young beams of the matin sun, and stretching over a wide space of ground, an almost interminable forest of masts defining its western margin. Fort William frowned in the foreground of the scene, and turning from it to the opposite bank, the eye wandered over a beautiful tract dotted with elegant villas embosomed in luxuriant trees.

Whilst looking around, my eyes chanced to rest upon the water, and I saw several jackdaws alighting on something borne along by the current. It was the dead body

of a native, which, as it passed close by the vessel, presented a most horrid and disgusting appearance. It was perfectly naked, and much swollen from being a long time in the water, and the carrion birds had torn the flesh from the bone, so as to render the features undistinguishable. I turned away in disgust from this revolting spectacle, and felt no inclination to look at the other bodies which were constantly floating past. In this way many thousands of bodies are annually borne to the sea, and are devoured by the sharks and alligators which infest the several mouths of the Ganges. In numberless instances bodies are carried by the current into the nullas of the river, which become dry when the tide is out, and they are then preyed upon by the vulture, the jackall, and the jungle-dog.

It is horrible to look upon them in this state; but people are habituated to such things in India, and even Europeans soon get to think very little about them. In many places, however, the local authorities, in order to prevent bodies from remaining near frequented parts of the river, employ persons to keep them pushed away from the bank.

The Hindoo believes that if the bodies of those who have not been careful to secure pardon for sins during life-time, are thrown into the Ganges, they will ultimately be allowed to transmigrate into some form which will bring them to heaven, and at its confluence with the Jumna at Allahabad, a part of the river deemed peculiarly sacred, many pilgrims drown themselves. And when we recollect, in addition to these circumstances, that, although the followers of Shiva bury, while those of Vishnu burn, their dead, the parias of both sects, unable to perform the obsequies of their deceased friends from extreme poverty,

throw them into the river, as the easiest way of getting rid of them—the number of bodies which annually descend its several branches must be enormous.

Our commanding officer quitted the ship at an early hour for instructions relative to us, and on returning stated, to our utter surprise and chagrin, that we were not to disembark, but would tranship into another vessel about to proceed to Bombay; as the 13th Regiment was in progress to Scinde, on the western coast, and expected to proceed home in the March following. This was sad news for us; after a long and wearisome voyage to be thus sent to sea again, without putting foot on land, or getting a single peep at the City of Palaces, was most disheartening. I felt thoroughly disgusted with soldiering at the moment, and a sigh escaped me that I was not my own master; but a little reflection taught me how unavailing the indulgence of such feelings was, and I resolved to bear this fresh disappointment as patiently as I could. I determined, however, not to quit Calcutta without possessing some memento of my having been there, and accordingly set myself to make a sketch of Khidhrapoor bridge, and the most striking objects in its vicinity. This occupied me until the approach of evening, when our commanding officer, who had again gone for orders, returned and informed us this time, to our great satisfaction, that he had obtained liberty for us to land for a few days to refresh ourselves after the voyage. This glad tidings was a rich reward for the little philosophy I had practised from necessity, and brought with it the moral that one should never despair.

Orders were now issued that we were to prepare for disembarkation at daylight on the following morning; and long before that period, all was bustle and confusion be-

tween decks, as we packed up our necessaries and hammocks, being directed to take the latter with us. At dawn we were ready for departure, and accordingly got into the boats alongside, which moved slowly away from the stately vessel that had brought us safely over many a sea; and in the course of a quarter of an hour, we were once more high and dry upon land; when a march of a few hundred yards brought us to Fort William, where we were quartered in a part of the bomb-proof barracks prepared for our reception.

The fort is situated on the same side of the river as the town, from which it is a mile distant, a fine plain intervening termed the esplanade. It is built in the form of a pentagon, and is a magnificent fortress. Many, however, consider it to be too extensive for defence, as it requires 600 pieces of cannon to mount all the works; but it should be remembered that in case of danger, Fort William must inevitably become the refuge, or at least, the grand *point d'appui* of the Europeans in Bengal, whose number at present might be roughly estimated at 24,000. The comprehensive mind of Clive foresaw the increase of the British in India, and he was doubtless thus induced to erect this fortress on so extensive a scale. He commenced it in 1757, after the battle of Plassey, to prevent a recurrence of the cruelties experienced in the preceding year by the defenders of Calcutta, when it was taken and destroyed by the sanguinary Surajah Dowlah. Its erection cost the large sum of 2,000,000*l.* sterling. There are barracks for 11,000 men, nearly all of which are bomb-proof, and the works are protected by mines and counter-mines, the whole being surrounded by a ditch, in which water can be introduced from the river to a considerable depth.

About four o'clock in the evening it became tolerably cool, and I then walked through the fort. Trees of noble proportions shaded the different roads so as to exclude the sun, and on these were constantly alighting the long-legged adjutant, a species of the vulture tribe. Many of these birds were stalking quietly around, utterly regardless of my approach, their tameness resulting from the protection afforded them in consequence of their being excellent scavengers. No soldier is allowed to hurt one of them; and should injury be wantonly done them, the delinquent, besides other punishment, is obliged to pay so much per diem, until the bird, which is placed in the charge of some natives, recovers. There is a bazaar within the fort where every thing a soldier requires is procurable; an observatory, lately erected, and a good sized church, a chaste and handsome structure in the Gothic style of architecture, built of cut and hewn stone.

On the succeeding morning, wishing to see the city, I procured a pass; no soldier being permitted to quit the fort without one; and after emerging from the north gate, found myself on the esplanade, with the City of Palaces in my front. I was soon opposite the Government-house, which is a noble structure, and every way worthy of being the residence of the greatest personage of our Indian empire. Its appearance, however, loses much of the effect it would otherwise possess from being situated singly on the verge of an extensive plain, which gives it something of a desolate and deserted appearance, and it reminds one of a great monarch utterly forsaken by those courtiers and others who form the chief attraction round the sovereign. A low wall surrounds the enclosure, in which the building stands, and from this springs up four colossal gateways, over which are placed

sphinxes and other emblems, with the Queen's and Company's arms.

After passing the Government-house I got into Tank-square, where the principal hotels and shops kept by Europeans are. The houses are large, but their latticed windows and verandahs have something heavy and dull about them, and one looks in vain for that lightness, beauty, and regularity which characterise the generality of European cities. Throughout the whole of Calcutta,* scarcely even excepting Chowringhee-road, the princely dwelling of the white man stands side by side with the hovel of the native. This gives the streets an irregular and disjointed appearance, and the feeling can scarcely fail of taking possession of one's mind, that it may justly be termed the city of palaces and huts.

I wandered for a considerable time through the streets, being shaded from the sun by an enormous umbrella made of cane, which a native held above my head. These umbrella bearers stand at the corners of the streets, and offer their services to the passers-by, a pice or two being all the remuneration they seek for. They are very useful to a stranger, as not only will they afford one protection from the sun, but likewise act as guides if required. Having occasion to learn the value of gold, I proceeded to the change bazaar; and here I found the money changers seated cross-legged in their little shops or offices, which

* Calcutta was first erected into an English settlement in 1690, by Mr. Charnock, the Company's agent in Bengal, who obtained leave from the Mogul Arungzebe to remove their factory thither. In 1756, when it was taken and sacked by the soubah of Bengal, it had not above seventy British houses: since then it has been steadily increasing, and now contains a population of more than 800,000. Its situation was originally very unhealthy, being surrounded by forests and swamps, and although these have been in a great measure cleared away, and the climate thus rendered much more salubrious, it still suffers from the damp breezes of the Sunderbunds.

open for their entire breadth towards the street, with heaps of gold, silver, and copper before them. Yet some, with all this display of wealth, had scarcely sixpence worth of a cotton cloth wrapt about their loins, this being their only covering. The value of gold fluctuates at Calcutta, rating higher or lower, according to circumstances. At that time ten rupees, fourteen annas, or one pound one and ninepence, were given for the sovereign; but one pound two, and even more, is often got; so that English gold pays well for its carriage to India.

Fairly wearied at length with rambling through the town, I got into a palanquin, and stretching myself at full length, was carried back to the fort, paying the bearers on reaching there eight annas, which is the regular charge. On entering our quarters, a scene presented itself, for which I was altogether unprepared. During my absence many of the men had got drunk, and some of these were now engaged in fighting, others were wrapt in the torpid sleep of inebriation, while a few amused themselves *pro tempore* in breaking the charpoys, and dragging them along the brick pavement. Their bad passions like a pent-up stream, had burst out with redoubled violence from the long restraint imposed on them while at sea, and several completely showed the cloven foot. Unfortunately the non-commissioned officers possessed no control whatever over the men, by whom they were thoroughly despised; and some of them who did not wish to resist actual aggression, *vi et armis*, quitted the place altogether, while several others were quite as drunk as the privates, and equally riotous. I had just come back in time to prevent my own charpoy from being added to the many which already littered the floor, and throwing myself on it I remained a passive spectator of the disgusting scene.

In the evening we had a parade, and such a one it has never been my lot to witness since. There was no sign of the sergeant-major, who was absent altogether; the orderly sergeant was scarcely able to stand, and, while accompanying the officer through the ranks, which were half made up of drunken men, amused the sober part of us by exclaiming now and then in the deep patois of the north of Ireland: "Oh yees 'ill do, yees 'ill do."

Parade over, I gladly quitted the barracks to strol around the fort; and amused myself till night by observing the muslin-clad natives of the higher castes, and the splendid equipages of the Europeans which were constantly passing, driven by turbaned coachmen and followed by footmen or runners with bunches of horse-hair to switch away the mosquitoes. These would run a while beside the carriages should their services be required, and then jump up behind with the agility of monkeys. In the same way Sices kept up with their mounted masters, although the latter occasionally put their horses into a smart canter.

As I returned towards our quarters my way lay by the church, and seeing a light in it I entered, and found some twenty individuals engaged in worshipping Him who has promised to listen to the supplications of the few as well as of the many. The little congregation was composed of soldiers and their wives, European, half-caste, and native women. I remained till the meeting terminated; when the men informed me that the minister permitted them to meet there so many evenings in the week, and frequently came himself. They likewise stated that they were invalids about to return home, and had been in China, where they endured much sickness and privation. It was twenty years since some of them had landed

in India, and all expressed great satisfaction at the prospect of soon revisiting their native country.

In addition to the invalids of various regiments awaiting embarkation in the fort, was the miserable remnant of the 44th, which had been rescued from captivity in Affghanistan. I had some long conversations with one or two of these men; and the stories they told me of their situation at Cabul, their defeats there, and the subsequent disastrous retreat of the army, were melancholy in the extreme.

The garrison of Fort William at this period consisted of Her Majesty's 10th regiment, and a sepoy corps. The 10th had been there for nearly two years, and sickness had made considerable ravages amongst them: they had then upwards of two hundred men in the hospital. On the gates and other posts an European and native are stationed, so that one may act as a check upon the other. Sepoys invariably do their duty very strictly, acting up to the very letter of their orders. Their uniform is the same as that of the queen's troops, with a few trivial exceptions. A string of shells supplies the place of stock among the privates, and one of gold ornaments among the officers. Shoes with large brass buckles are worn on stockingless feet instead of boots, and their shakos are without peaks. The cloth in their clothing is of lighter texture than that supplied to the queen's troops, nor are their jackets so well fitted as those of the latter.

The native regiments have a very fine appearance on parade, and no troops on field days can exceed them for steadiness and correctness of evolution, while at the same time their firing is always close and excellent. They are, however, miserably deficient in that indomitable spirit, the characteristic of the British soldier, who is always

placed in the van when a breach is to be stormed, or a battery carried at the point of the bayonet. Fighting side by side with the European, sepoys have generally behaved pretty well; and taking the Company's native troops *en masse*, they may justly be considered the finest army ever organised out of Europe. Still the sepoy offers the most convincing proof that it is neither frequent drills nor height of discipline in a certain sense which constitutes the soldier. Men may, and have been, drilled till their spirits are broken; thus verifying the adage that there may be too much of a good thing.

The different sepoy grades are subadâr major, subadâr, jemadâr, havildâr, and naigue; the three first are officers, the two latter non-commissioned officers, their havildâr being a sergeant, and their naigue a corporal; native officers of any rank are under the control of the European ensign. When off duty, sepoys wear no uniform, and go about dressed like the other natives; they may easily, however, be distinguished in the streets, by the manner in which they have their hair, and their otherwise smart appearance. After their tour of duty is performed at Calcutta, a period of drill succeeds; that over, they are permitted to visit their relatives.

Native corps have frequently been guilty of mutiny, and there are few who have not heard at one time or another of Vellore and Barrackpore, and of the Hydra-headed appearance of disaffection in 1842 among the army of observation at Ferozepore, produced in part by the intrigues of the Seikhs. Most of the mutinies, however, among the native troops have been caused by interfering with their superstitions, so tenaciously clung to by all castes of Hindoos. Since the mutiny of Vellore, the arms of all the Bengal regiments, except those of the men on duty,

are placed each night in stands or racks termed bells, under the charge of a sentry, whence they are not allowed to be taken until the morning. Each regiment has ten of these bells, one to a company; and this precaution against mutiny is used even on the line of march, unless in an enemy's country.

The entire army paid by the Company, including the irregulars and local police, most probably would exceed 300,000 men; but the Europeans, who number about 30,000 of all arms of the service, are the *élite* and main strength of this force, as the Greeks constituted that of the army of Cyrus. Mutiny would, undoubtedly, be of much more frequent occurrence among sepoys, but for the salutary dread imposed on them by the vicinity of an European corps. In times of peace, crime, with the exception of mutiny alone, may be said to be unknown among them.

CHAPTER VIII.

EMBARKS IN A STEAMER FOR BOMBAY.—PROCEEDS TO SEA.—ARRIVES AT POINT DE GALLE.—NATIVE BOATS.—IS PERMITTED TO GO ON SHORE.—DESCRIPTION OF THE FORT, &C.—SEES A WATER SPOUT.—ARRIVES AT BOMBAY.—OCCURRENCES IN THE TOWN.

DURING the remainder of our stay at Calcutta, having been appointed pay-sergeant, my time was chiefly employed in arranging the men's accounts, and in issuing cotton clothing to them suited to the climate. Good drill trousers were obtained for fourteen annas per pair, shirts at the same price, and boots at a rupee per pair.

13th.—In the morning I was told we would embark by four o'clock, and directed to keep the men together as much as possible. Hackeries were ready at the appointed time, and after placing our baggage on them we fell in; but on the roll being called it was ascertained several of the men were missing; two of these were got in the congee-house, where they had been placed the night before by a sergeant of the 10th., their faces being blotched and swollen from the bites of the musquitoes; and two more were got in the bazaar, gloriously drunk. Another fellow was missing, we had to march off without him, and were soon on the deck of the *Queen* steam frigate, a vessel of about 900 tons, the forecastle of which was allotted to us, the lascar sailors living beneath us on the orlop deck.

15th.—At an early hour the anchor was weighed, and we rapidly descended the river until we reached Diamond Harbour, where we brought to, something having gone wrong in the machinery of the engine room. A day, however, sufficed to set all right again, and we soon found ourselves once more out at sea. I was now attacked with flux, which was partly to be attributed to drinking immoderate quantities of the water of the Ganges, which had been drawn up, shortly before we quitted Calcutta, from among putrid bodies, and placed in casks on the deck, where the heat of the sun kept it lukewarm. Several others were equally ill with me; but fortunately we had a doctor on board who understood the disease, and all of us were nearly recovered by the

21st.—When at noon hearing a bustle upon deck I ascended to ascertain its cause, and found we were in sight of land, in the shape of a long low line of hills, which lay to the north-east. This was the island of Ceylon, and every succeeding moment it became more distinct; as we rapidly neared the harbour of Point-de-Galle, where we were to touch for water and coals, large supplies of which are always ready here for the Company's mail and other steamers.

The anchor was scarcely let go when a number of canoes came alongside, laden with fruit, bread, and fish, of which we soon procured a good stock, having been supplied with money at Calcutta. The canoes of the islanders at this place are of singular construction, being formed of the trunk of a tree hollowed out, on the upper part of the sides of which, and at each end, boards of ten or twelve inches in height are firmly sewed with fibrous bark. They are very narrow in proportion to their length, and would certainly upset in the heavy surf which continually breaks

upon the beach, the harbour being much exposed, were it not for a simple contrivance. Two pieces of timber, larger or smaller, according to the size of the canoe, are attached to one side so as to project at right angles with it, to a distance of about six feet. At their farther extremities is fastened a third piece of wood, shaped like the canoe, but many times smaller and shorter, which rests upon the water. This frame is always kept to leeward, and so completely does it prevent the canoe from upsetting, that I was told the natives will fearlessly paddle through the surf in the roughest weather, accidents being of rare occurrence.

During the evening I observed several of the natives fishing with rods of about twelve feet long, and lines of eight, the bait being jerked about rapidly a few inches below the surface of the water, something like the way in which we fish for pike. One whimsical-looking old fellow, wearing the remains of a shattered Caroline hat, and a coat minus a skirt, kept constantly paddling round the ship during our stay, being either employed in fishing, or in selling what he caught. I was told he was a convert to Christianity, a circumstance which at once accounted for his dress; the Cingalese, though Buddhists, resembling the Hindoos in their dislike to European clothing, and particularly to hats.

22nd.—Wishing to go on shore, the commanding officer gave me permission to do so, telling me at the same time I might accompany him in the captain's gig. I gladly availed myself of this additional indulgence, and was soon standing on the wooden landing-place which projects into the water beyond the line of surf. From this, a walk of less than 100 yards brought me to the gate of the fort; a quaint old-fashioned structure erected by the Dutch, who had driven the Portuguese from the island,

only to be dispossessed in turn, in 1795, by the British, making little resistance. It is built of stone, the works being high, yet of no great strength, and has within it a pretty good barracks, and a neat little town, or bazaar, chiefly inhabited by half-caste Portuguese and native Christians. The garrison consisted of a company of the 90th, and a part of the Ceylon rifles, a corps officered by Europeans, like the Company's native troops.

There are two hotels within the fort, at which tolerable wine is sold for four shillings the bottle, being double the price it is either at Calcutta or Bombay. The toddy of Ceylon is said to be unrivalled, and my first object was to get some of it, which, as it was far advanced in the day, was a matter of difficulty. This liquor is extracted from the palm and date-trees, by means of an incision made where the leaves or branches strike out from the main stem, which is near their tops. It is of a white colour, and not intoxicating, unless drank in immoderate quantities. Mixed with sugar, it is a sweet and favourite drink in those burning climes, being alike cool and pleasant; but it will turn sour in a few hours, and soon becomes entirely unfit for use.

While walking through the bazaar, I was much struck by the cleanliness and neatness of the houses and streets. Within its limits I saw two schools, the teachers being Europeans, in which a number of children were instructed, who were nearly all neatly dressed, and apparently very orderly and attentive. Wishing to purchase some bread, I made inquiry for a baker's shop, and was directed to one; but he had sold all his stock, and referred me to a housekeeper who kept this necessary for sale. A Malay, who spoke a few words of English, now became my guide, conducted me to a pretty white-washed house,

× 90th L. I.

and informed a girl of colour who chanced to be in the way, what I wanted. She called her mistress, who produced some very bad bread, which I was fain to buy at a dear rate for want of better. This person told me she was an Englishwoman by birth, and a soldier's daughter, but she scarcely recollected her parents, both of whom had died while she was still very young. She had got married to a half-caste, and in consequence of living among a people who chiefly spoke Cingalese, had nearly forgotten her native tongue, which she talked very badly indeed.

On returning to the ship, I found much uneasiness prevailing in consequence of four of our men, who were bathing, having swam to a rock at a considerable distance. A boat was lowered down, and sent to their assistance, by which they were all got safely on board, and then confined by order of the ship's captain; however, he afterwards interceded for them with the commanding officer, who was thus induced to let them off unpunished.

23rd.—Having taken on board a sufficient quantity of water and coals, the anchor was weighed, and with the aid of a half-caste pilot we soon cleared the harbour. The sea was perfectly calm, for there was scarcely a breath of wind, and the steamer with nothing to impede her progress, went rapidly along. On the ensuing day a breeze sprung up, and sail was made; about noon we passed a troop-ship bound for Bombay; her deck was crowded with men, who cheered us long and loud as we shot a-head, the compliment being returned by us.

25th.—In the morning the sky was hid from the view by dense masses of cloud, through which the sun was only faintly visible at long intervals. Towards mid-day, rain descended in torrents, and compelled us to keep between decks,

where the heat and vapour soon became almost insupportable. Night came on, and the rain abating, I went upon deck; immense sheets of forked lightning now illumined the heavens in a way I had never witnessed before; while occasionally long zig-zag tracks, of unusual brilliancy, marked the path of the electric fluid from cloud to cloud. I remained upon deck the better part of the night, as I found it next to impossible to stay below, for there the cockroaches were whizzing about in all directions: besides, my quarters lay near a door into the engine-room, which was the road the rats took *en route* to the forecastle; and when I endeavoured to sleep, these animals, unusually busy in running backwards and forwards, jumped upon my face and awakened me.

Next morning it rained slightly until about ten o'clock, when it ceased, and the sun shone dimly forth through the dark clouds that hung low over our heads, as if ready to burst and deluge us with a torrent of water. Men, women, and children now evacuated their quarters below, in order to breathe the cooler air upon deck, and were congratulating each other on the rain having ceased when suddenly a waterspout was seen at a distance of half-a-mile. There was something peculiar and unusual in the appearance of the atmosphere at this period, the sun had a wan and sickly glare, and the clouds were very dense and heavy.

The base of the waterspout had a broken and misty appearance, and in some degree resembled a whirlwind of dust, as it turned round with inconceivable rapidity, its diameter appearing to be about eight yards. At the height of forty feet from the water the column commenced narrowing gradually till it reached a considerable elevation, when it resembled a pillar of a pale bluish colour, having

at intervals the tints of a rainbow. It had a rapid spiral motion, till it met the clouds; where it broke into dense masses of vapour, which spread like compact volumes of gas smoke in every direction. For about an hour it moved in a course parallel with that of the vessel, and then came very close, afterwards going eastward until we lost sight of it.

28th.—In the morning we made Bombay, the capital of Western India, and dropped anchor opposite the town, which does not present any thing like an imposing appearance towards the harbour. The latter is very picturesque, and would be a good subject for the pencil of the artist, blue hills lining its southern shore, whilst at its inner or eastern extremity conical rocks rise abruptly from the water, giving it the appearance of miniature lakes. Patee mhars, with enormous cotton sails, were continually crossing to and fro, and in their sterns muslin clad Parsees were frequently seated, whose white and stainless dresses formed a striking contrast with the dark skins of the dandies.

Next day I got permission to go on shore, and had a pleasant row until within a short distance of the bunder, where a vast number of native boats of all sizes was collected. We had no small difficulty in threading our course among these, but at last, after much pushing and scolding on the part of our lascars, we gained the landing-place, and climbing up the stairs I found myself in the midst of innumerable bales of cotton strewn on the ground, or placed in piles. A large gateway led from this compound, and on passing through it, I entered a square termed Bombay Green, in the centre of which is a statue of Cornwallis, and subsequently turning into a street branching off it, I found myself opposite a factory where cotton was

prepared for exportation. A number of natives were here engaged in working a large machine by means of horizontal beams; the labour was very severe, and they appeared much distressed, being frequently obliged to stop. A considerable quantity of cotton is annually exported from Bombay to England, the manufactures of the natives having been completely ruined by those of the latter country, with which their markets are continually glutted. There is, nevertheless, great room for the employment of capital in this part of India; and did some enterprising individuals but start cotton factories in Bombay, with the material at first cost and cheap labour, they must become dangerous rivals to the manufacturers of England.

A little farther on I came to another factory, where some fifty or sixty women were employed in picking and sorting wool. They laughed heartily at my curious gaze, for which the Parsee overseer rated them soundly, as I gathered from his gestures and a few words of abuse he used, which I had already learned.

While observing the wool sorters, a girl of about thirteen passed me with a child dangling astride upon her hip, of which she was the mother. This is the manner in which all native women carry their children; one arm only is clasped around the child, the other being thus left at liberty for any other purpose. Mothers at this girl's age are quite usual in India, both sexes reaching puberty there at a very early period. It is no uncommon thing to see women grandmothers at twenty-two; at forty they have all the outward signs of very advanced senility.

After walking through the town for some time, I was about to return to the ship, when a ludicrous occurrence detained me a while longer. Our commanding officer had come ashore in coloured clothes, and was engaged in buy-

ing a cane from a buneah, as I passed him on my way to the bunder. The fellow, it seemed, had asked considerably more than the value of the cane, a circumstance which aroused the indignation of a soldier who happened to be standing by at the time, and who accordingly commenced abusing the native for endeavouring to impose on his countryman, winding up by telling the officer, "that the buneah was the greatest rogue in Bombay, and that uv he wid jist step over to the barracks wid him, he should have twice as good a cane gratis." The officer, however, not choosing to profit by his offer, simply thanked him and walked away. When he had got to a little distance I went over to the soldier, who still remained standing at the shop, and asked him if he knew who he had been addressing with such freedom. "Musha, throth I don't," was the reply. "Why," said I, "he is a colonel, and no less, and take care he does not get you punished, for I saw him looking very sharp at your number." "Tare an agers, are ye in earnest?" he inquired, with precipitation. "Perfectly so," I replied, "you have treated the colonel with disrespect." On hearing this, the soldier pursued the officer, who had got into another street, and commenced a series of the most comical apologies for not addressing him in a more respectful manner, concluding, by saying, "Yeer soul to etarnal glory, yeer honour, sure I nivir thought ye was a colonel at all, at all: musha, bud I'm an Omedhaun anyhow." Mayo was his native county.

CHAPTER IX.

SAILS FOR KURRATCHEE.—BEGINS TO LEARN HINDOOSTANEE.—SOLDIERS INTERFERE WITH THE LASCARS.—CHINESE CARPENTERS.—ARRIVES AT KURRATCHEE.—DISEMBARKS.—MARCH TO THE CAMP: ITS DESCRIPTION.—INSPECTED BY THE COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF.—GETS THE ROUTE TO SUKKUR.

AFTER a stay of a few days, during which we got fresh rations from on shore, the captain of the *Queen* received orders to convey us to Scinde, with some other troops to be sent on board immediately. These, on their arrival, I found consisted of details of several native corps, amounting altogether, with their women and children, to 284 souls. A guard of the 78th Highlanders, in charge of several tons of baggage, likewise came on board, with a few artillerymen, so that altogether we had upwards of 400 hundred persons in the ship, exclusive of sailors, and were therefore very much crowded.

Among the native troops, were a detachment of the 3rd Bombay Cavalry, which had formed the Governor's body guard for the past two years, and who, having been relieved, were now proceeding to join their head-quarters at Hyderabad. The dress of this corps was very pretty, consisting of light-grey jackets with white braiding, and blue trousers with red stripe; when mounted they had a very soldier-like appearance. This guard I understood is invariably chosen from the *élite* of the different cavalry

regiments, and is thus calculated to give a favourable impression of them in general.

2nd December.—Every preparation being made, the anchor was got up, and in the course of a few hours we had lost sight of land, when the natives began to get sea-sick. Next day, however, they had mostly recovered; and I amused myself in learning a few words of Hindoostânee from a subadâr's son, who spoke a little English, on his proficiency in which he took much pride. Indeed, I always found natives plume themselves on speaking English, which they consider a great—as it is to them a useful accomplishment: and one can scarce pay a Parsee, &c., a more acceptable compliment, than to tell him he speaks the language of his masters well. In this way the first two days of the voyage passed agreeably; meanwhile I had got on most excellent terms with the troopers, who frequently sang songs and twanged a three-stringed instrument, resembling a guitar, to amuse me. But this agreeable state of things was partially interrupted by a drunken artillery-man, who flung a piece of pork among the troopers; they being Mahometans, or Moormen as they styled themselves, could receive no greater insult; and in a moment, half a dozen of them sprang to their feet and bared their sabres, cocking their pistols at the same time. The companions of the artillery-man, who were almost equally drunk with himself, became enraged at the readiness the sepoys shewed to resent the insult offered them; and although a sixty-four pounder, on a circular sweep, and the anchor chain, separated the parties, there was danger for a while of their coming into collision. But luckily, the troopers did not know who threw the pork, and a few of us seizing hold of the artillery-men, the matter ended quietly; nevertheless, the natives were

very angry, and stormed and chattered for a length of time. The captain, hearing of the transaction, directed precautions to be adopted, to prevent the Europeans interfering with the natives in future, the former being ever the first aggressors.

Even prior to our having got to Bombay, some of our party would designedly drop their gutteries on the lascars' connae, who would at once throw it overboard. No people at the same time could be more inoffensive, or more amiable; and their serang was the kindest person imaginable. This person had one of the most benevolent countenances I have ever seen, and his gentle manners told it was the correct index of his mind.

Our chief favourites on board the *Queen*, were two Chinese carpenters, owing to their eating pork and biscuit like ourselves, with both of which we abundantly supplied them. Nor were they insensible of our kindness, as they did several jobs for us, and would take no payment; frequently offering me their tea, which was an exquisite beverage, although used without sugar or milk. Their round, sallow features and high cheek bones, formed a striking contrast with the countenance of the Hindoostanees, which were mostly finely formed, and possessing in some instances, a noble and lofty expression. These carpenters worked with much neatness and despatch, despite their odd-looking tools of most primitive construction.

On the evening of the third day from our quitting Bombay, we cast anchor outside the harbour of Kurratchee, which is too shallow to admit large vessels, and shortly after, orders were issued to hold ourselves in readiness for disembarkation on the following morning. At dawn, the whole of our detachment, with the exception of a baggage

guard, quitted the ship, as patee mhars were already alongside. I was among the last who remained, being obliged to see all the baggage away, and had then to take charge of a boat in which were the women and children. After rounding a point which had hitherto concealed the harbour, a noble sheet of water met the view, completely land-locked; but half a mile further on so shallow did it become, that we had to quit the patee mhars, in which we were, and get into a jumptie, or flat-bottomed boat, which drew only eighteen inches of water. It was impelled by poles, which the dandies first stuck into the sand at the stem, and then, pressing their shoulders against these, walked along the rim of the jumptie till they reached the stern, when they went forward again. In this manner we got slowly on for the space of an hour, crossing a bar of sand, which was white with the foam of miniature breakers, and found ourselves off a point which shelters what may be termed the inner harbour. Here were several dinghies, which are singular-looking craft, and reminded me of drawings I had seen, of ships in the time of the early English monarchs. In these, the natives coast to Bombay, Goa, the Persian Gulf, &c., &c. The largest of them might carry eighty or one hundred tons, having two masts, with a single sail to each.

By this time, the tide was on the ebb, a vast sheet of mud being gradually disclosed to the eye, with channels of water here and there, resembling small rivers. Along one of these, the jumptie held on its course, we having Kurratchee now in view, which presented a solitary and desolate appearance. While endeavouring to ascertain the situation of the camp, which I understood was at some distance from the town, a large dinghie shot by us, with a beautiful Arab horse on board, and grounded a little way

ahead. In a moment the dandies had their large sails taken down, and their four-fluked anchor carried out in order to warp it off, but their endeavours were fruitless, and there they had to remain till the tide turned.

A quarter of a mile from the bunder, we came to the men's boats who had preceded us, stuck fast in the mud; the next minute, our's was in a similar position; and here I had to stay, being in charge of the baggage, until the tide set us afloat again. With the exception of the baggage guard, the whole of the men waded through the mud, in which they were floundering like a shoal of porpoises when we came up, some of them carrying the officers on their backs. It was now mid-day, and the women and children were getting sick from the heat of the sun, to which they were exposed since we quitted the steamer, eight miles distant. I made an awning for them with an old sail, which effectually excluded the hot beams; and scarcely had I done so, when my stomach began to admonish me that I had eaten nothing during the day. Luckily, one of the party had brought some rice biscuit with him, and this, though most unpalatable food, was now had recourse to. Some small fish were got by another of the men in one of the jumpties, and immediately appropriated and cooked. A quantity of excellent dates was likewise procured; so we fared sumptuously on the provisions of the dandies, who had all waded ashore; with the intention however of paying them on their return, which I took care to see done.

Night came on, and the tide having turned, at eight o'clock the jumpties began to float, and two large ones with the heavy baggage, which had grounded in the rear, came up. Such of the guard as were in these, unlike us, had suffered much from thirst, in consequence of having

procured liquor by some means before they quitted the steamer, and afterwards breaking open the cases of brandy belonging to the officers; although a sergeant was with them. Several were drunk, and clamoured loudly for water, of which we had but little left; during the day one of them had fallen overboard, and was nigh being drowned.

The dandies now returned from the town, and endeavoured to get their boats towards the bunder, the utmost noise and confusion being caused by the way in which these were crowded together. The one in which I was, got first out of the *mêleé*, and in a few minutes, ran alongside a large dinghie still fast in the mud, which I boarded in search of water. The moonghee demanded my business, and I told him as well as I could, that we were very dry, and wanted pâni; he immediately directed one of his men to get me some; and this person taking my canteen, filled it with deliciously cool water, which I handed after a hearty pull, to my thirsty comrades beneath, who quaffed it eagerly. The kind-hearted Mussulman, seeing how dry we really were, gave us nearly all the water he had, until the thirst of the men was slaked, when, after thanking him, I descended the side of the vessel, and in a few minutes more, reached the land.

We found sufficient hackeries awaiting us at the bunder to convey our baggage to the camp; but the difficulty was to get the jumpties unloaded, from the greater part of the guard being drunk. After much trouble, I at length set them to work, but it was eleven o'clock before every thing was on shore, and we had then to load the hackeries, which was at last done, with the assistance of the drivers, when we moved forward to the camp, which was four miles from the bunder. To me this was no

trifling walk, tired as I was with assisting to unload the baggage, and being still weak from recent sickness of a most debilitating character.

After being half smothered with dust, and tumbling some dozen times in the ruts, along the apology for a road, we reached the camp, on the outskirts of which were piquetted the horses of the artillery and cavalry. Some of these lashed fiercely as we passed, without, however, injuring each other, as their hind legs were tied with cords to pegs driven into the ground. At a short distance from the horses lay the sices asleep, looking like so many inanimate lumps, their heads as well as the rest of their bodies being covered with a white cotton cloth rolled tightly around them.

The scene which now met the eye was a striking and singular one. We were in an extensive plain, over which the line of hackeries moved slowly on, the harsh creaking of their rude wooden axles rising above the screaming of the jackal or the fierce neigh of the tethered war-horse. Long lines of white cotton tents were seen in the distance; and, in the bright moonshine which descended on them, the bared sabre of the trooper or the bayonet of the foot soldier, glanced at intervals as they paced to and fro on sentry.

After passing through the camp, we reached our tents, which had been pitched on its extreme right, and apart from those of the other troops. A drink of bad mawkish water was the only refreshment procurable; and after swallowing it, I rolled myself in my guttery, and lying down on the ground in the corner of a tent, was soon asleep.

When I awoke next morning, much refreshed, despite the hardness and inequalities of my couch, I found our

bobagees, who were Goa Portuguese, had already settled a fire-place in front of the tents, and were busily employed in preparing coffee for breakfast. Although the prospect of a feed of fresh brown rootie and coffee was extremely pleasant, yet I did not allow my imagination to dwell upon it to the exclusion of other matters, and therefore walking to a hill at a little distance, I ascended it in order to get a bird's-eye view of the head-quarters of the veteran Sir Charles Napier. Close beneath was the camp of the 2nd Bombay Europeans and that of the Artillery ; farther on was the half-finished cantonments, in which the right wing of the 78th was quartered; and behind these stood the regimental and Sudder bazaars. In the distance the town of Kurratchee was seen, with the sea on its right, while to the left lay a low line of blueish hills, which terminate at Cape Monzee, and which are a continuation of the mountain range that divide Baloochistan from Scinde. Clumps of trees formed a girdle around the plain, which is several miles in extent, and equally sandy and sterile; being thickly covered with the milky tur bush or prickly pear, which abounds in dry poor soils.

Kurratchee is situated within 600 miles of Bombay, and fifty from the Gharra mouth of the Indus, which is the one navigated by the river steamers, unless after the rainy season, when they can pass through its more western branches. It is considered a good military station, being healthy, the grand desideratum in India; and from its harbour and rapid means of communication with Bombay, is the key of Scinde. Still Kurratchee has a great many drawbacks. It is encircled by a country of the most barren and unproductive description, affording a totally inadequate supply of provisions and forage, which must, consequently, be brought from other dis-

tricts. Its harbour, too, is only accessible to small craft, vessels drawing over thirteen or fourteen feet of water being obliged to anchor off its entrance.

The troops stationed at Kurratchee, at this period, consisted of the right wing of the 78th Highlanders, the 2nd Europeans, a troop of Artillery, and two sepoy corps. The 2nd Europeans had suffered severely from the Scinde fever at Hyderabad, where they had been stationed during the warm season, and only a few men of one wing were able to do duty. They still continued to bury two or three daily, and when brigading, doolies were always at hand to carry those who fell out sick to hospital. The 78th, on the contrary, were in the most excellent health, having but lately come from Bombay.

The ensuing week passed rapidly over us, so pleased were we with our new quarters; and towards its termination we received orders to prepare ourselves for the commander-in-chief's inspection, who had come to review the troops. This was startling news for such of us as had only been imperfectly drilled; but ready we had to get, and were marched to the review-ground, where we formed part of a long line of troops, of which we took the right.

The pealing of cannon close by us announced the approach of the commander-in-chief, Sir Jasper Nicols, and the Governor of Scinde, who rode down in front of the line, attended by a numerous staff, and preceded by a few ladies in palanqueens. The rear of the *cortége* was brought up by some of the Arab guards of Sir Charles, who made their horses prance and curvet for the purpose of displaying their superior riding. They were armed in a half-Balooch half-European fashion, having the sword and shield of the former and the carabine of the latter. Their

outré dress and long beard gave them a fierce and martial appearance.

Next day we were told that we were again to go on board the *Queen*, and proceed in her to the Gharra mouth of the Indus, off which she was to remain until the river steamers descended to convey us to Sukkur. This was a much more agreeable way of travelling than marching to Tattah, the usual route to the Indus from Kurratchee. The Bombay authorities, expecting that we should have to perform this march, had supplied us with tents and tent-lascars.

CHAPTER X.

EMBARKS.—ARRIVES OFF THE INDUS.—WANT OF WATER.—RIVER STEAMERS.—SICK SEPOYS: THEIR DISLIKE TO SCINDE.—EUROPEAN PRISONERS.—PROCEEDS UP THE RIVER.—WOOD STATIONS.—DESCRIPTION OF THE INDUS.—MODE OF IRRIGATION.—FLIGHT OF LOCUSTS.—CONDITION IN THE STEAMER.—GETS AGROUND.—ARRIVES AT SUKKUR.—REGIMENTAL CANTEEN.—IS SENT TO DRILL.—DESCRIPTION OF THE CAMP.

16th DECEMBER.—At an early hour all was bustle in our little camp, as we packed up our necessaries and loaded the hackeries. When this was done, I was sent to collect the followers we had brought with us from Bombay, and see that none of them took French leave, as they had received a month's pay in advance. The bobagees were the first I caught, and giving these in charge to the guard, I next secured the tent-lascars; but our dhobies, who had brought us clean clothes on the previous evening, could not be found in the neighbourhood of the tents, and I had to proceed to the bazaars in search of them. I made the choudrie aware of their desertion, and he immediately sent police to seek them; but even these did not ferret out the runaways, wherever they had ensconced themselves, and so we had to return without them.

On my way back to our tents, I was passed by half a dozen of the detachment, all nearly drunk, and mounted upon the asses of some of the bazaar people, which they

urged along at their utmost speed, hotly pursued by their owners, shouting, "Loote wollah! loote wollah!" at the top of their voices. The soldiers thought it glorious fun, and whooped and hallooed like so many Canadian savages, as they scoured across the plain, half hid in a cloud of dust. But their sport was brought to a sudden termination by a shallow dyke, into which men and asses tumbled; and the men being flung, with one exception, their owner pouncing upon the animals ere they had time to remount.

The sun was high in the heavens when we marched from the camp, and the day was hot and oppressive. Clad as we were in warm coatees, lined with flannel, and cross-belted, we found it doubly so, perspiration soon oozing from every pore. On reaching the bunder, after a smart walk, in order to get out of the sun as soon as possible, we found the water was not as yet sufficiently deep to float the jumpties. After the lapse of an hour, however, their sterns loosened from the mud, and the men now getting into them, each boat was dragged in turn by some fifty coolies into deep water. I chanced to be in the headmost one, which was heavily laden, a circumstance which attracted the notice of the colonel, who ordered it to be lightened, directing some of the men in it to get into his own jumptie, which carried no baggage. I made sure to be one of these, as I felt certain we must reach the steamer first; nor was I mistaken, for we soon shot a-head of the other boats, and a light breeze springing up, the sail was shook out, when the dandies, throwing aside their poles, squatted upon the deck astern, and lit their hookah.

We had got but little more than half way to the steamer when the sun went down; the jumpties we had left far behind now rapidly neared us, their oars or sweeps being vigorously plied by our men. Not wishing they

should get a-head of us, we threw off our cross-belts, and imitating their example, soon left them far in our rear again. It was useless to ask the dandies to pull; all the Bengalee we were masters of did not make them stir; they either would not or could not understand us; and there they sat placidly smoking, the hookah being passed from one to another, without their condescending to move till we reached the point which shuts in the harbour, when they shifted the sail to make a stretch on the larboard tack, in order to clear it. After getting to windward of the point, we came in sight of the steamer, which rose and fell at regular intervals, upon the long undulating swell of Oman's sea. In another half hour we were alongside, and after climbing to her deck, were surrounded by the lascars, who evinced much pleasure at seeing us, whom they now considered in the light of old acquaintances.

The other boats dropped alongside one by one, it being eight o'clock when the last arrived. Owing to the lateness of the hour, we could only get a part of the baggage on board, and I had, therefore, to sleep on the deck without my guttery. This, however, was a matter of little moment to me now; so stripping off my coatee, that its wings might not be injured, I lay down upon the hard teak-wood planking, and slept soundly till morning.

After the remainder of the baggage was got on board, we stood for the Indus, and cast anchor off the mouth of the Gharra branch. Here we staid for four days, the last two of which we suffered much from the want of water, our stock on board becoming exhausted. On the morning of the fourth day, our tongues almost clave to the roofs of our mouths; but at last, we contrived somewhat to assuage our thirst with brackish water, which we pro-

cured when the tide ebbed, and the river water floated on the top of the salt. We longed earnestly for the arrival of the steamers, as their coming would ensure us a supply of this necessary, and many an anxious eye was turned towards the Gharra during the morning. At noon, our hearts were gladdened, by seeing a small steamer crossing the bar, and bearing down upon us. In less than an hour she was alongside, having her deck crowded with sick sepoys, from Hyderabad and Sukkur, who presented a most heart-rending appearance. With very few exceptions, they were all ill of fever, and some were in the last stage of existence. A few of the latter had only dirty cloths wrapped loosely around them, and, these falling off while being dragged up the ship's side, their persons were in a state of nudity, as they staggered or were borne to the forecastle. Several of the European officers were very ill likewise; one was evidently dying, and had to be carried in his cot, from the little cabin of the steamer to the deck of the *Queen*.

Another steamer shortly after came alongside, with a similar freight of miserable objects. When one saw these sepoys and their officers, they could never wonder at the dislike evinced by the former to going to Upper Scinde. To the soldier, nothing is more terrible than pestilential disease; he sees his comrades dying hourly around him, until the horrible feeling at length fastens upon his mind, that his own end is rapidly approaching, and that he, too, must die like them. A thousand times sooner would he fall in the battle-field, when his blood is warm and his mind excited, and the shout of victory or defiance on his lips. There is a charm in a death of this sort, unlike death from sickness, when the spirit is bowed down and broken with bodily anguish, and

the faculties of the mind benumbed with pain, as the destroyer presses his icy hand slowly and heavily upon the heart, and draws aside the veil from another world. With the malaria fever of Sukkur before their eyes, it cannot be a matter of wonder that sepoys exclaimed, on their march thither, "Lead us to the battle-field first, we would rather die there than by disease." Still, what a contrast was presented by the conduct of the various European corps sent to Sukkur. Part of the 17th regiment suffered severely there, yet they never murmured; the 13th was sent there after long and arduous campaigns in Affghanistan, and who ever heard them express dissatisfaction? The 78th relieved them; the terrible history of their stay is before the world. Their successors in this charnel-house of Indian dominion were the 2nd Bengal Europeans, and did they murmur? No. The devotion of the Europeans in India is certainly most astonishing, yet how is that feeling abused? They are the first to mount the breach, the first to storm a battery, and the first to confront disease; and what has been their reward? Let the diminished pension list supply the answer.

With the sepoys were two European prisoners, belonging to the 2nd, or Queen's Royals, who had the fever, and never did I see more miserable looking objects. Their beards were long, like those of the natives; and their clothes consisted of only a shirt and trousers, torn and filthy to a disgusting degree. Their crime was desertion, while in confinement for some petty offence. They had travelled several hundred miles across the country, towards the Punjaub; and at length were arrested in Bawhulpore, by order of the British resident, at the court of the rajah, who had received information of their being

in the neighbourhood. From thence they were sent to Sukkur, where they caught the fever, prior to their being put on board the steamer. Poor misguided fellows, I pitied them from my heart; weak, sick, with no one to bring them a drink, or even to cook for them, their little allowance of tea and sugar lying by them untouched, their situation was miserable in the extreme. I did all I could to ameliorate it, and even spoke to the captain on their behalf before quitting the ship, stating that they must die if not attended to. "It can't be much matter to them," was his reply, "as they will most certainly be shot." I ascertained, however, from the steward, that he did give orders that they should be taken care of.

I was obliged to remain behind with the baggage guard until the next day, and the intervening night can never be obliterated from my memory. The deck was crowded with sepoys and baggage, and some of the former lay stretched even upon the guns; how they could retain their balance there much surprised me. One could not stir without treading on them, so thick did they lie, still and motionless, wrapt in their cotton cloths, a poor and ineffectual protection from the cold heavy dew that was falling. Although several of them were dying, not a single groan of pain was heard. The patient, uncomplaining Hindoostânee bore even the bitter pangs of dissolution without a murmur. Two or three expired during the night, and were instantly flung overboard; and one fell from the head, and was drowned before assistance could be rendered by the watch; the dawn showed us their bodies fast in the paddle-wheels or floating alongside.

At this time I acted as provost-sergeant as well as pay-sergeant, and had consequently to take charge of our prisoners, three in number. One of them had been con-

fined for theft. During the night this man contrived to slip away from the sentry and got down into the engineer's cabin, whence he purloined some silver spoons and two bottles of wine. A khitmagar saw him ascend the ladder, and suspecting something was stolen, awakened the engineer, who on searching became aware of the particular articles he had lost. The man was fully identified by the khitmagar in the morning, when a search was made for the spoons, which were at length discovered in his pouch; the wine we did not look for as we felt quite certain he had drank that already. On arrival at head quarters, this soldier got 100 lashes for this and the former offence; he still, however, continued a confirmed thief; and for a similar crime was afterwards sentenced by a general court-marshal to twelve months' imprisonment, and to be discharged the service with ignominy. He had enlisted out of the Penitentiary at Belfast at eighteen years of age; was always a thief; and offers the most convincing proof that corporal punishment cannot reform a person of this character.

At an early hour one of the steamers returned for the baggage, and when it was all on board of her, we started from the *Queen*, and got safely over the bar, which can only be crossed at full tide, and at a certain point where there are no breakers. When a mile beyond it, we had to cast anchor; a steamer astern of us having grounded near the breakers and fired a signal of distress. She soon floated, however, and we commenced getting up our little anchor, which was no easy job from the strength of the current, and the whole chain having run out in spite of the exertions of the sailors.

It was near night when we joined the detachment which had been left in a large jumpty, formerly one of the state

barges of the ameers of Hyderabad, and which a steamer had towed down the river. Its thick cotton sails made an excellent awning to screen them from the sun, and protect them during the night from the dew which falls uncommonly heavy in Lower Scinde.

Jumpty is the Scindian name for the boats in use upon the Indus, which cannot be said to be navigable for any others. They are flat-bottomed and draw only from a foot to eighteen inches of water, being low in the stern, and high in the stem, with decks at each end in the larger sort, the smaller having only one deck astern. Raised about two feet above the deck by means of upright posts, is a flat piece of wood on which the dandies walk backwards and forwards as they work their oars or sweeps. Each jumpty has a mast, and the very largest ones sometimes two, which can be taken down or put up in a little time. On the whole they are awkward clumsy-looking things, yet admirably adapted for navigating a river like the Indus, along which such numberless shallows occur, and where sandbanks form and shift again in a day, sometimes in a single hour. The state jumpties of the ameers are curiously carved in minute and elaborate patterns, and have cabins; they are all now in the possession of the British, and one of them is usually towed by a steamer when conveying troops from place to place, as they accommodate from sixty to 100 men. The labour of dragging a jumpty against the current, when there is no wind, is very severe. A tow-line is fastened to the top of the masts, and five or six men laying hold of this in single file, move along at a slow pace, being frequently obliged to wade through the water when shallows occur.

23rd.—In the morning we started in company with the other steamboat, and at noon reached a wood station,

where we brought to for the purpose of getting a supply of fuel. Wood is the only firing along the Indus, and as the largest of the steamers is scarcely 100 tons burden, (having therefore but little storage room,) a day's supply is all that can be taken on board them. In consequence, regular wood stations have been formed along the river to Sukkur, from seventeen to twenty miles apart, and natives employed to cut and transport thither sufficient quantities. Besides fuel, the masters of steamboats supply themselves at these wood stations with Scindian pilots, who are supposed to know the safest channel, from the appearance of the water. I cannot say whether they do or do not possess this knowledge ; it is very probable that they do ; at all events, great caution and experience is required on their part to ascend or descend the river safely. The pilot stands near the head of the vessel, and when he wishes to have its course changed, makes a signal with his hand, which is telegraphed by the master, who stands between the paddle-boxes, to the man at the wheel, who is always a European. The master, from his central position, can both direct the engineer beneath as to whether he should stop the vessel, or put her to half speed, &c., and attend to the leadsman, who keeps constantly sounding. The latter individual on board the *Satellite*, the steamer which conveyed us to Sukkur, was a negro, who sang out with a peculiar nasal twang, egg womah, or dho womah, as the case might be.

The steamers on the Indus are built of iron, and flat-bottomed, the largest drawing only four feet of water. Still, the river is so shallow in some parts, that they frequently get aground, and, although this does not injure them, it is often productive of much inconvenience, weeks

in some instances elapsing before they can be got off. Each steamer has a nine pounder aft on a circular sweep; and double-barrelled wall pieces, or brass one or two pounders, on moveable pivots along the sides. Their armament, though small, is quite sufficient for the purposes of defence; and with the aid of five native marines, the number on board of each, Baloochees and Scindians have been always held at defiance, and frequently soundly beaten.

As we ascended the river I found its course resemble the tortuous windings of a serpent, the current running with great force against the opposing banks of quicksand, which it continually undermines, and washes away. This sand is of so light a nature that it floats upon the water in vast quantities, until caught by some obstruction; or falls to the bottom, where the current is not rapid. In this way islands are formed, in the course of a single floody season; or immense banks of muddy sand arise, which soon dry with the sun, and split into large angular masses, the fissures reaching to the depth of several feet. In a space of time, surprisingly short, these islands and banks become extensive tracts of flat impervious jungle, generally of dwarf acacia, which are again swept away when the current shifts and runs against them.

Owing to the frequent changes of the Indus, and the devastation they cause, its banks may be said to be a perfect wilderness except at wide intervals, where it flows by a district uninjured by its floods. These districts are generally above high water mark, and in several instances extremely beautiful; presenting a striking contrast to the dreary and monotonous scenery which encompasses them. Clumps of umbrageous trees dot their surface,

sometimes disposed so as to form vistas through which the minarets of chunammed mosques are visible.

On the edges of the flats along the river, we frequently saw large alligators, which resembled logs of wood in the distance, so motionless did they lie, until alarmed, when they ran to the water and disappeared beneath its surface. They are perfectly harmless with respect to the human species, the natives constantly bathing and swimming in the river without receiving the slightest injury from them. We frequently amused ourselves by firing at them, one of the artillerymen with us having abstracted upwards of a hundred rounds of balled ammunition from the pouches of the sick sepoys, on their going on board the *Queen*. Occasionally we got a shot at a flock of pelicans or geese, but generally at too long a range to have any chance of hitting them.

As we got higher up the river, low clouds of dust would often make us aware that the Scindian herdsmen were driving their flocks of buffaloes, goats, or sheep to water. The buffaloes bear some resemblance to the old Irish breed of cattle, excepting the hump between their neck and back; their price averages from five to twelve rupees. The goats have long mottled ears like a spaniel, and are equal in value to the sheep, which is a poor diminutive animal, usually bought for one or two rupees.

Irrigation is extensively practised in Scinde, there being no rainy monsoon, and showers falling but rarely even in the cool months. The method is simple, a cut is made inland for a few yards in the bank, of sufficient depth to admit the water. A rude wheel is next constructed with a double rim and transverse connecting bars, its nave extending several feet, at one side, having a cog at

this end fitted to another cog at the lower extremity of a perpendicular beam, retained in its position by means of a frame. To this beam is attached a horizontal pole to which they yoke the oxen or camel to work the machine. On the wheel is placed from fifteen to thirty water chatties, on the principle of the elevator in corn stores; and as these are brought up full to its top, they empty themselves into a trough placed beneath, which communicates with the principal channel from which a number of minor ones branch off at right angles, and from a perch to three apart, through the plot of ground to be irrigated. Were it not for this simple machine, Scinde would be a barren wilderness; and even as it is, only a few hundred yards inward, in many parts along the branches of the river and the banks of the canals, are cultivated. Wells occasionally supply water for irrigation, but only within the delta of the Indus, where a few feet is all that need be dug for it; still cultivated tracts occur inland, but at wide intervals, and the eye grows wearied in wandering over vast plains dotted with sand hills and stunted shrubs, which present the most sterile and desolate appearance.

The steamer brought to each night, if possible, at a wood station; but should it be delayed during the day, so that it could not reach a place of this sort, we stood for some favourable part of the bank, and the moment the stem of the vessel touched it, the leadsman jumped ashore with the end of a rope in his grasp, followed by two Scindians, one with a pile and another a mallet. The pile was driven into the ground in a moment, and the rope fastened to it, the steamer being then warped close to the bank, and a plank placed to form a gangway.

When a tree was at hand the pile was dispensed

with; as to the anchor, it was scarcely ever let go, for the rope answered the purpose better, and gave less trouble.

The steamer properly secured, the Europeans on board, with the exception of the soldiers, who must first receive permission, got out upon the bank to have a walk; as did also the natives, for the purpose of cooking their connae. In a little time the fires of the latter glimmered here and there amid the jungle, and one stumbled in every direction upon the Hindoo and Mahometan kneading or baking their chupaties, or boiling their rice. Quitting the vicinity of the steamer, the sounds of animated life gradually become less and less distinct; until at last one found oneself in the solitary wilderness, where the silence was unbroken save by one's own footfall, or the distant plash of an undermined portion of the river's bank, as it tumbled into its yellow waters.

Near most of the wood stations there is either a village or a few herdsmen's huts, whither I frequently went with a temporary quartermaster-sergeant to purchase bullocks for our use. The pilot was our guide on these occasions, the master of the steamer giving him his instructions before leaving the vessel: he told the ryots what we wanted, who having caught a bullock, we made our own bargain by tendering first three or four rupees, and so on till the money was accepted. The price arranged, the animal was led to the bank near the steamer, and thrown to the ground by hampering its legs with a rope, when a Mussulman butcher, after repeating a prayer with his face towards Mecca, cut its throat. The bullock was next suspended from a triangle formed by three oars, and skinned; after which operation it was cut up, and sometimes issued to the men, who would light a large fire upon the bank, and broil away till near midnight.

27th.—At noon we were opposite Hyderabad, and our colonel going to visit the authorities there, left strict orders that no person was to leave the boat under any pretence whatsoever; in consequence of the prevalence of fever at that station, nearly all the troops being sick.

Hyderabad was the capital of Scinde during the rule of the Talpoori princes; and is still its largest town. It stands on the Fullallee branch of the Indus, and from what I could learn respecting it, the population might be 35,000 or 40,000.

Next day the steamer crossed to Kotree, on the opposite bank of the river; the head-quarters, if it might be so termed, of the Indus flotilla, which consists of five or six steamers. At this place there is a small craft fitted up as an hospital for the sick sailors, and at a short distance on the bank is the residence of the commandant of the flotilla, an officer of the Company's navy. Close beside the river is a beautiful tope, which completely excludes the sun, and forms a cool and pleasant shade. Permission being given to quit the steamer, I found it extremely exhilarating to walk in the morning through this, and to watch the tiny three-streaked agiump (*Xerus trivittatus*), a species of squirrel, very numerous here, jump from bough to bough. When pelted at, they would run to the top of the trees, and conceal themselves among the thicker leaves in a moment. Occasionally a larger description of the squirrel tribe might be seen stealthily peeping from a hole in the foot of some old mangoe or date-tree.

While at Kotree a steamer arrived from Sukkur with a French general of the Punjaub, and his lady on board. He wore an undress uniform of blue cloth, trimmed with gold lace, and was a fine-looking officer. The lady was a

pretty brunette, apparently uninjured in her complexion by the climate, and quite as fair as she could have been when she left her own France, to which she and her husband were now returning. He, like several other European officers, among whom was the noted Avitabile, famed for hanging the Peshawurese by dozens, had been obliged to quit the Seikh service in consequence of the anarchy which followed the death of Runjeet Sing; not, however, it was said, till they had nearly all reaped a golden harvest.

1st January, 1844.—Having received twelve days' allowance of very bad biscuit and arrack, and two of salt pork to be used if we could not get fresh meat, we started for Sukkur. The scenery along the river was of the same character with that below Hyderabad, consisting of low jungle, newly-formed banks or islands, occasional padee fields, and picturesque spots at wide intervals, where the floods had not yet brought desolation. The navigation of the river became gradually more difficult, from the numerous islands in its centre, and the shallowness of the Channel; the water frequently shoaling to a depth of four feet; and the steamer drawing that number, her bottom grated on the sand.

On the sixth day after quitting Kotree, the Shwaen branch of the Brahooik Mountains was discerned. The Baloochees, it seemed, were constantly in the habit of making forays into this part of Scinde, and on one occasion had attacked the very steamer we were in; every precaution was therefore used when the vessel brought to for the night, to prevent surprise. Ammunition was got up from the hold; our muskets placed so that we had only to lay our hands upon them; and the nine-pounder and swivel guns loaded with grape-shot, and pointed towards the bank; the guard was likewise doubled, and

charged to be as vigilant as possible. No Baloochees, however, made their appearance, and the night passed away quietly. In the morning several Scindians came to the steamer, and complained bitterly of the robbery committed on them by those freebooters a short time previous.

As we sailed beneath the hill, which rises almost perpendicular from the water's edge, a sailor pointed out to me where the Baloochees had attacked them. They could not have chosen a better place along the whole course of the river to Sukkur. Portions of rock lying detached as if by an earthquake, afforded them excellent cover; whilst large stones scattered over the side of the hill, answered the same purpose, besides forming rests for their matchlocks. There chanced to be a detachment of sepoy recruits on board at the time, and these were landed and directed to dislodge the Baloochees if possible from behind the rocks. The steamer then ran beneath the hill, close at the foot of which lies the only safe channel in this part of the river, the enemy pouring a shower of iron bullets into her without however doing much harm to the crew, as their fire was principally directed against the funnel, by injuring which they thought they could prevent the vessel from sailing. The sepoys soon drove them from their position; and the guns of the steamer being elevated as much as possible, scattered grape and canister among them with deadly effect, as they scampered up the face of the hill.

A young lad told me that the morning before they were attacked, he had picked up out of the water a small board of teak-wood, thinking it might be useful. He was subsequently directed to work one of the swivel guns, and lashed this to the railing so as to cover his body.

When the action was terminated, he examined the piece of board, and found three balls in it, every one of which would have taken effect in him but for its being in the way.

This was not the first time that the *Satellite* had done good service. When a company of the 22nd Regiment, which formed the guard of the British resident at the Ameers' court, was attacked by a force of 5000 men provided with cannon, and obliged to retreat towards the river, the *Satellite* crossed from Kotree, took them on board, and cannonaded the enemy with excellent effect.

The crew of the *Satellite* was now in a very sickly condition, as were all those likewise of the other steamers. Fever and ague had reduced most of the sailors to a state of great debility; all of them, without a single exception, looked pale and weakly; and one sought in vain to discover among the poor emaciated fellows any thing of the jolly tar. It was painful to descend into their part of the steamer, and to see them stretched around, some shaking with the cold ague fit, and others burning with fever.

7th.—During the early part of the day a strong east wind continued to blow, raising the water into waves of three and four feet in height, and rendering the steamer quite unsteady. About noon the sun became suddenly dimmed, as if it were eclipsed, and on looking upwards I saw in mid air what had the appearance of a descending snow shower of considerable extent. I soon, however, ascertained this was a flight of locusts, many of them falling upon the deck and into the water. We caught several, which were between two and three inches in length: their legs were formed like those of the grasshopper, having wings thin and transparent, similar to the dragon fly, which they re-

semble. They were uncommonly strong in proportion to their size.

The nights and mornings were now very cold; heavy dews fell; and as we lay upon deck with only a thin cotton awning over head, we rose chilled and benumbed and clustered around the funnel to get a little warmth. Some of the men, too, had lost their gutteries, and those of others were broken; there were no great coats* among us; and, as the result of this state of things, many were attacked with fever and dysentery, and lay stretched upon the hard planking without any thing under or over them. But the women and children suffered most: they all took the fever, and it is utterly impossible for language to describe their miserable state on the exposed and crowded deck of the little steamer. No nourishment was procurable for them except the coarse and unpalatable ration of the men, unless when we came to villages, and even then little was to be got except vegetables, otta, and occasionally milk. However, if any thing could reconcile us to our situation, it was the circumstance of our colonel being little better off than ourselves. A small corner, screened from the rest of the deck by the walls of a tent, was the apartment of himself and his lady, while ascending to Sukkur; the solitary cabin of the steamer being taken up by the single officers, and the master and mate. I shall never forget the kindness of the good old colonel towards the sick men and women; he brought them his own tea, addressed them in the most soothing terms, and did every thing in his power to ameliorate their condition. Fortunately, as regarded myself, an old soldier at Calcutta

* Drafts of recruits are supplied with great coats at the rate of one to every two men, these are usually placed in store on landing. This is wrong, men should retain them until arrived at head quarters.

had recommended me not to sell my ship blanket like others, who got a rupee for theirs. I followed his advice; and I would tell every recruit to imitate my example, for I am almost certain that after the severe fit of flux I had had, and the consequent shattered state of my system, but for the blanket I should not now be alive. Rolling myself up in it and placing one half of my guttery under and the other half over me, with a knapsack for my pillow, I slept warm and comfortable at nights, when those less provident were shivering with cold. Still, raw and chill as the nights were, the day always brought a scorching sun with it, and we were glad to have a screen to protect us from its beams.

12th.—Towards mid-day we had got within eight or nine miles of Sukkur, and confidently expected that evening would bring us to the end of our journeyings for the present. The tall minaret, which we were told stood quite close to the camp of our corps, was already distinctly visible with the aid of glasses; and the words, "Well, we shall soon be with our regiment," were heard in every direction, and fell with cheering effect upon the ears of the sick man; when suddenly the steamer struck, several of us being thrown down with the shock. In a few minutes she again floated, but only to stick firmly on another bank broadside to the current; the master having been busily employed meanwhile in beating the pilot.

The nine-pounder was now fired several times, with the double object of making our situation known at Sukkur, and to shake the steamer off the bank; but there she stuck as fast as ever, although the concussion caused such an intense vibration from stem to stern, that our boxes, ranged along the deck, were nearly all burst open, having their locks and hinges broken. The master at length, seeing that there was no chance of the steamer being got off for some

time, caused the anchor to be let go, to prevent her being carried away with the current whenever she floated.

The circumstance of our being aground was bad enough in itself; but our situation was rendered still worse by the last of our beef and pork having been consumed, while one solitary feed of rice was the entire stock of eatables on board. With the ungrateful prospect of hungry stomachs opening to the mind's eye, the day passed heavily away; many a wistful look being cast up the river to see if a steamer which had preceded us was coming to our assistance. Lacking books, I was fain to amuse myself by watching the little islands of sand formed by the current, around the steamer, which broke the water into numberless eddies and whirlpools.

Night at last came on; and as we were in the centre of the river, at this place about two miles wide, the darkness made our situation appear doubly lonely. Wearied at last with watching the yellow stream that rushed rapidly past, I lay down and endeavoured to sleep, but sleep I could not. The angry murmurings of the river as it hissed and fretted against the steamer, the distant screeching of the jackals, and the moans of agony proceeding from a dying woman near me, effectually prevented repose. Thoughts of home gradually obtruded themselves on my mind; I contrasted my former happy condition with my present lot; and I bethought me how little the generality of people know of what soldiers endure. Occasionally the public hears of their sufferings in front of an enemy, or of the many deaths caused by plague or pestilence; still they may be said to live on unnoticed, and unthought of, without a solitary ray of sympathy to cheer them.

About midnight, I felt a violent shock, and thinking some accident had befallen the steamer, I jumped up,

and looking over the railing, saw at a glance that she was afloat. The bank had been washed from beneath her by the current, which, instead of forming rapid eddies and whirlpools as before, now floated quietly and silently by, the vessel lying with her head up stream. The shock had been occasioned by the anchor chain checking her as she drifted.

At an early hour on the ensuing morning, steam was got up, and the anchor weighed, and we found ourselves slowly stemming the current once more. As we approached Sukkur, the river narrowed, its banks being fringed with date trees, among which we could see soldiers walking, who, we afterwards ascertained, had come to meet us, our arrival being expected. After rounding a point, the fort of Bukkur burst upon our view, rising from an island in the river; while on its right lay Sukkur, its bungalows scattered for some distance along the bank; and on its left the town of Roree, resembling a fortress in the distance, the minarets of the tomb of the sainted Khaja Khizr glancing in the sunbeams.

Shortly after the anchor was let go at the landing-place, the bank was crowded with soldiers and natives, and as a pool of water had to be crossed, coolies carried us over safely, firelocks and all, with only a single exception, in the person of a bulky Yorkshireman, who fell into the water, to the infinite merriment of the lookers on. We were soon formed, four deep, and the quick march being given, the band which had come to play us to the camp, struck up the regimental quick step, and on we went, through the bazaar, surrounded by a dense crowd of soldiers and natives, numbers of the former shaking hands with the old men among us, and such of the young ones as were known to them. I had no acquaintance to wel-

come me; I was almost alone among the crowd; and could scarcely help envying those men who were greeted so gladly by their former comrades.

After quitting the village, the camp was seen beneath us in a small plain, shut in by low hills, and a few minutes walk brought us to its centre, where we halted; the pay-sergeants then called over the names of the men already posted to their several companies, and marched them to their tents.

A holiday was given to the regiment in consequence of our arrival: the canteen being thrown open to us, with full permission to get as much liquor as we pleased. Several of my quondam comrades in consequence of this licence, got most gloriously drunk; together with many of their new acquaintances, who were not slow to give them the full benefit of example; and the old bronzed and weather-beaten veteran might be seen reeling to his tent in company with the young recruit, whose cheeks had the healthy flush of Europe on them.

Having no inclination to drink, I disliked going to the canteen; but was at length induced to pay it a visit, by the repeated solicitations of my new comrade, who was what was termed in the corps a two-medal man, having been present at the recapture of Cabul, and defence of Jellalabad. A walk of fifty yards brought us to the canteen, which was a tent pitched opposite the centre of the camp, having two doors, by one of which the sergeants entered, the privates being admitted through the other. Outside the latter door, a number of soldiers were collected, waiting to be let in, five or six being only allowed to pass through at a time, by a sentry, who held a pole across it with one hand, whilst the other grasped a bayonet. The pole was raised to admit batch after batch, according as they could

be supplied, and great was the crushing and pushing to get in first, the sentry having much difficulty to keep the crowd back. As I had still my sergeant's chevrons on, I was allowed ingress by the sergeants' door, and got a dram of arrack, for which I paid four pice. On coming out, my comrade requested a loan of my jacket and cap; thus disguised, the sergeant *pro tempore* was admitted through the door-way of the aristocracy, and in a quarter of an hour, made his appearance, with a step so unsteady, as to convince me he had made large libations to the jolly god.

Two drams I found was the quantity of arrack allowed to each man per day; these cost the soldier eight pice, equal to threepence of our money; but it was optional with him whether he purchased it or not. To prevent men from getting more than a single dram in the morning, and another in the evening, tickets were supplied to them by pay sergeants, which they were obliged to give to the canteen sergeant, on getting their allowance of liquor. Wine and brandy was sold at the rate of four-pence half-penny a dram without tickets; but the high price of these liquors prevented the men from drinking them, unless when plentifully supplied with money.

On returning to our tent, my comrade spread my guttery along with his own, his gunny bag being underneath to keep them from the ground. The bed thus made was a hard one enough, for a guttery is only a piece of cotton cloth doubled and stuffed with raw cotton, so as to make it, when pressed together, of about an inch in thickness. Still I was much better off than when lying in the open air on board the steamer, and slept soundly and comfortably, until the shrill notes of the drill bugle reverberated through the camp on the following morning.

As I prepared for drill, the orderly sergeant of the company came into the tent and read a regimental order, which directed that the non-commissioned officers of the draft should take off their chevrons and return to their duty as privates. I obeyed as a matter of course, and was then paraded by the sergeant-major with the rest of the recruits who were told off into squads. We had to go over all we had already learned again, beginning at the extension motions and dumb-bell practice. This was rather unpleasant, as the morning was raw and cold, the drill-sergeant in consequence occasionally permitting us to clap our hands for the purpose of warming them.

Drill over, we were returning to our tents, when the melancholy notes of the corps of bugles as they played the dead march arrested our attention. It was the sad and only requiem of a poor fellow who had caught the fever while ascending the river with me, and who thus, fated like thousands of his countrymen, had come to lay his bones in the land of the stranger far from the resting-place of his fathers. Two of the five women who had accompanied us likewise died shortly after our arrival, the hardships endured in the steamer having been too trying for their constitutions. One of them was young and pretty, and had been the belle of Chatham garrison; she left a little boy behind her who sadly missed his mother.

Shortly after I had returned to my tent, the bobagee appeared with breakfast, which consisted of a little rice, a beefsteak tough as leather, a part of my ration rootie, and a black bitter fluid dignified with the name of coffee. This was in a tin pot so dinged and bronzed that one could see at a glance it was an old campaigner. But the plate was quite a curiosity in its way; and had an antiquarian but seen it, he would have pronounced it an interesting relic of

the feudal ages. It was made of copper which had once been tinned over; from hard service, however, not a vestige of the latter remained; while, from the same cause, it was as battered and worn as ever was cask or cuirass of chivalric paladin. This plate I was informed had made the whole of the Affghanistan campaigns, and was taken by the enemy in Cabul, but recovered again by a man of its own regiment on the recapture of that city.

After breakfast I strolled out to have a look at the camp. The soldiers' tents were pitched in regular rows, each company occupying a row. The area enclosed by a tent was about sixteen feet by eighteen, accommodating sixteen men, eight at a side; the walls were six feet in height pierced with four doors having porches. The fly or roof of the tent was double, the outer canvas projecting over the sides so as to protect them from the sun. Two poles supported the roof, around which the arms were placed; the belts being hung on a stick fastened crosswise to them. This is what is called a double tent, and is the kind mostly in use in Bengal, five being the number allowed to each company. The camp was constructed so as to form a parallelogram, a wide division or road separating the right and left wings. This led to the officers' tents, pitched in rear of their respective companies; the hospital tents being again in rear of them; while behind all was the regimental bazaar where the mystheries and buneahs had set up their palkees and were vending their wares. The cooks were posted on the flanks of the camp, where their fires, which they vainly endeavoured to shelter by screens of cane, blazed in the open air; our victuals being always full of sand whenever the wind blew any way strong. Nothing was permitted in front of the camp except the magazine and quarter-guard, and canteen tents.

The country around had a bleak and most desolate appearance. A wild and apparently interminable jungle stretched backwards towards the north-west, while in the immediate vicinity of the camp were barren flint hills which reflected back the vivid beams of the sun like a burning glass. The river's side presented the only fair spot in the scene. There the date and mangoe tree flourished luxuriantly, their roots moistened by the water, and the eye after scanning the wilderness turned with pleasure upon their emerald foliage.

The cantonments for our regiment were in course of erection on a hill which had been a vast graveyard, and was still covered thickly with Mahometan tombs in every stage of decay. One of the barracks was occupied by the skeleton of a troop of Bengal artillery; twelve men being the number alive out of eighty who had come there a few months previous, and even these were tottering on the brink of the grave; most of them afterwards died when ascending the river to Ferozepore. At one period they had been deserted by their followers, and could not get coolies to carry their dead to the graveyard, which they were unable to do themselves, and had therefore to dig holes in the floor as well as they could and bury them there.

During the past sickly season the Sudder bazaar was almost completely deserted by its inhabitants, and the few who remained, worn out by continual attacks of fever, flitted about the streets like so many shades of Tartarus. Those, however, who had fled this deadly spot, were now returning daily; or had their places supplied by other natives, induced to repair thither by the proximity of an European corps, from which they expected to gather a rich harvest.

The late deserted streets of the bazaar were therefore

beginning to wear an appearance of bustle and animation, and the hum of business succeeded to the stillness which had reigned in the mud tenement of the buneah. At one o'clock the cook again appeared with our dinners. Mine consisted of the remaining half pound of my day's ration of beef (the other half being the steak of the morning), and the water in which it was boiled, which the rogue called soup, but such soup I had never tasted before. The black broth of Sparta would have been a luxury in comparison, and even a Lycurgus must have acknowledged that it was rather meagre. Salt junk and biscuit would be princely fare to this; and I almost wished myself on board ship again. I called the cook, and inquired if nothing better was to be had. "Nia jonna sahib," was his reply "you give no pice, me give notin but ration, give pice and I give connae." "Well, and how much pice am I to give?" said I. "Give dho pice, me give toad in the hole, dho pice more, give mangoe pie, rice pudding." On tendering him, however, the requisite number of pice, he gave me to understand nothing was to be had until the ensuing day, so I fasted from necessity until tea-time. But when I then ferretted out the remnant of my ration rootie, I found the sun had made it hard and dry as a sapless twig. I now thought there was no alternative left me, but either to bolt this unesculent, or fast on till morning, when suddenly a loud cry of "bout hatcha rootie gurhum rootie" rang through the camp. This was the cry of the lug wollah, and going to the tent door I shouted "Hedherow lug wollah," until the fellow appeared and supplied me with a two pice lug. The dhoud and muckin wollahs next coming round, a pice worth from each enabled me to fare sumptuously.

The rations supplied by the commissariat to soldiers in

India daily, consist of one pound of bread, the same quantity of meat, five-sevenths of an ounce of tea or coffee, with sugar, rice, and salt. This would be more than sufficient for a man if it were of a tolerable quality and properly cooked. Neither is the case. The meat in India unless when stall fed is bad, and the worst is thought good enough for the soldier; and the bobagees acting upon this principle give themselves but little trouble to dress it properly. The bread, too, was brown; and that issued to our regiment was ill baked, gritty, and otherwise bad; the worst potatoes in Ireland would have been preferable. The result of using the commissariat rations was excessive costiveness in the warm season, which deranged the system, and rendered it more susceptible of fever when the sickly season came one. In proof of this, the sergeant-major told me at a subsequent period that he never had an attack of fever at Sukkur; which he justly attributed to abstaining from coarse indigestible food, and taking medicine at regular intervals. The fever cases likewise among the officers, were only in proportion of one to sixty of the soldiers.

A soldier's pay in India, in single batta stations, is ten rupees, one anna, and in double batta stations, twelve rupees, seven annas per month; but there are charges deducted from these sums which may be rated at an average thus:

	R.	A.	P.
Followers, including bobagees, nappies, and shoeblacks	2	0	0
White clothing, &c.	2	0	0
If a mess is formed	2	0	0
Total	6	0	0

This will leave him but a small surplus to spend in amusement; a drunkard will procure liquor with it, and he

must then use his commissariat rations; sober men generally pay for better victuals. It is an erroneous opinion that soldiers' pay is doubled by the Company; a man who clears sixpence in England is better off than a man who clears ninepence in India, for the former has not nearly so many incidental expenses as the latter. Besides, sixpence is of more real use in Great Britain than ninepence in India, despite the cheapness of some things there. Cavalry are much worse off than infantry, for they, in addition to the charges noticed, have to pay sices, so that their clear pay does not amount at an average to more than four rupees per month.

CHAPTER XI.

LIGHT IN WHICH RECRUITS ARE VIEWED.—GENERAL REMARKS ON THE MEN.—REMOVES INTO CANTONMENTS.—A HAIL STORM.—SERGEANT MURDERED.—PATRICK'S DAY.—DRUNKENNESS AND ITS EVILS.—LIQUOR SELLING.—BENEFITS OF TEMPERANCE TO THE SOLDIER.

My condition from the moment of my arrival at head quarters underwent a total change, as every thing there was different from what I had hitherto seen. There was more order and regularity, the men obeyed more readily and willingly, and I found myself pretty well at home among them, despite my being looked down upon as a recruit, an individual regarded by the old campaigner with the most thorough contempt. I soon ascertained that a young man of any abilities or education could not do worse than join a regiment coming off hard service; it is extremely difficult for him to get on; and even supposing he does so, others will consider it an infringement on their hard earned rights. Men who have seen service view the promotion of a young soldier with the utmost jealousy, and numberless are the reflections cast upon the raw recruit. Better for a young man of ability to join a regiment,the men of which have not seen hard service; he will then, when dismissed drill, be on a footing of equality with the oldest soldiers, and his intelligence and fitness for promotion will be fairly appreciated.

But although there was much order and regularity, in a

military point of view, among the old soldiers, their conduct in other respects was frequently abominable, and their language of so foul a character, as almost to make my blood curdle and my flesh creep when I recall it. In many instances, the lips of sergeant and private teemed alike with pollution, and their horrible oaths and execrations coupled with expressions of obscenity pained my ears tenfold more than the shrill screaming of the troops of jackalls that came nightly from the graves and tombs to prey upon the offal of the camp. Still, strange as it may seem, I soon became habituated to all this; and their language grew daily less and less offensive from constantly hearing it, until finally I began to imbibe the grossness of those around me in spite of myself. Such is the baneful influence of example. Indeed it requires no ordinary strength of character to persevere in a course which subjects one to the sneers and taunts of those with whom he cannot do otherwise than associate, and who are not slow to denounce the man who does not act like themselves. The sober, the honest, and the honourable are assailed in a variety of ways; and let them but descend one step, and in a majority of cases, they will fall to the last rung of the ladder, where the triangles await them.

The month of January passed away without the occurrence of a single event worth noting, and the beginning of February brought no alteration. Towards the middle of the month, however, some heavy rain fell, a cold north wind blowing at the same time which penetrated through the crevices of the tent, making us feel chilly and comfortless. Luckily, by this time, we were all supplied with charpoys which raised us a good height from the ground, now wet and dirty, although a trench had been dug around the tent to keep the water from flowing in.

As March approached, General Sale, who had been commandant of the station, departed for England, his successor being the other lieutenant-colonel of the regiment, as he was the senior officer at Sukkur. A few days afterwards we removed to the barracks now ready for our reception, which were built of sun-dried bricks, plastered with mud mixed with straw, and whitewashed with chunam. The floor was likewise of mud, together with the roof, which was formed by spreading it upon canes laid closely together on the rafters. Each barrack contained half a company of men, having at one end rooms for the sergeants, and a wide airy verandah all round, in which were washing apartments, indispensable in India.

We were now much better situated than when in tents, having sufficient room, and a cleaner residence, besides being cooler by day and warmer by night. The thermometer frequently rose to 80° within the barracks; and in consequence of the heat we had no evening drills, while the nights, on the contrary, were sometimes very cold, and a violent hail-storm occurred about the 12th.

For two days before the storm, the heavens had been black and lowering, and we thought there would be rain. As night came on, dark clouds completely obscured the sun; and as the shadows deepened, vivid flashes of forked lightning, rendered objects at a considerable distance distinctly visible. I had never before seen such brilliant lightning, and the effects it produced, as it lit up the jungle through which the river flowed, were wild and sublime.

It might be about nine o'clock when, tired of watching the lightning, I quitted the verandah, and throwing myself on my charpoy, commenced reading. The wind in a little time rose to a storm, and rushed with deep

moanings through the barracks, still illumined by intense flashes. Suddenly a pane of glass cracked loudly close by me, and the next instant the whole window was driven in. Thinking this was caused by the electric fluid, I rushed from the spot; but ere I had proceeded half a dozen yards, the long building was filled with a cloud of dust, mingled with lumps of clay, and even stones, while at the same time the enormous beams which supported the roof groaned and creaked, as though they would fall and crush us to atoms.

On getting to the end door of the building, where I felt I was tolerably safe, I turned to look round; and beheld a scene sufficiently wild and singular, dimly lit up with lamps swaying to and fro, suspended from the roof. Men just awakened from sleep were partially seen through the whirling dust, jumping from their charpoys, and rushing to the doors to escape, thinking another earthquake, like that at Jellalabad, had overtaken them. Others were endeavouring to close the doors already open, while not a few were seen tumbling over charpoys in their hurry to get away. Immense hailstones, some of which exceeded an inch in diameter, soon began to descend through the chinks made by the storm in the roof, and extinguished most of the lamps, their places, however, being supplied by the lightning, which became more and more intense.

In about two minutes it ceased to hail, and the wind dying away, the dust disappeared, the lightning ceasing at the same time. The lamps were now relit, and we found that all the windows at one side of the building were broken, and some of the doors shattered. Proceeding into the verandah, I found it strewn with hailstones, the ground outside in every direction being white with

them. I looked up at the sky over my head; it was a clear blue, from whence the stars beamed down as brightly and silently as though cloud or storm had never obscured them. Towards the east, a dark mass, from which frequent flashes of lightning burst, indicated the direction the hurricane had taken.

At day-break next morning rain was falling, and soaking through the roof in different places. After the lapse of an hour, however, it brightened up, and persons then began to creep from beneath their gutteries, and inquire how their neighbours had fared during the night. On going abroad, I found the canteen and other tents were blown down, chairs and tables, and books and newspapers being imbedded in the puddle; but the camp-followers had suffered most of all, their palkees, and many of their hastily constructed huts having been knocked about. The bazaar was a scene of complete devastation, and afforded ample evidence of the strength of the storm, the effects of the buneahs and others being strewn in the dirt in every direction. Some of these were digging for dry clay, and spreading it on the elevated floors of their little shops, in order that, at least, they might have a comfortable seat. Others were cutting channels to let off the water, while their bebees, seated on charpoys, looked on with apparent indifference as they smoked their hookahs. Hawks and hens were killed with the hail, which had even knocked those sentries down who could not get under shelter, and whose only resource was to lie with their faces to the ground, and cover them with their hands, which were much bruised by the icy shower.

On the second day after the storm a sad event occurred in the regiment. A lance-sergeant had confined a man for gambling, afterwards getting him released without

punishment, by giving him a good character. The soldier, nevertheless, considered himself aggrieved, and secretly resolved on a terrible requital. Loading his musket, he watched for the return of the sergeant, who had gone in the meantime to the bazaar, and shot him through the back as he was about to enter his room.

On learning what had happened, I proceeded to the barrack where the foul deed had been committed. The sergeant was still in the same place where he had fallen on being shot, with a small dark pool formed by his heart's blood beside him. No change had passed over his features; his clothes were still left unbuttoned, and his stock unclasped; and but for the crimson spot beside him, one would almost have imagined that he slept.

Next day the remains of the murdered man were borne to the grave. The road thither lay beneath the cell where the assassin was in durance, and I was told that he seemed much agitated on hearing the beat of the muffled drum, and the melancholy music of the solemn dead march, as the procession passed his prison.

He was but a very young soldier, and was said to have been instigated to the act by a worthless scoundrel with whom, unfortunately for himself, he had associated. Many a youth is ruined in the army by bad company, who might otherwise have become a good man, an honour to his corps, and a respectable supporter of national glory.

The murdered man, whose name was Slack, was represented as not being of a very tyrannous disposition, but as ignorant and illiterate, having been a sweep prior to enlistment. His melancholy end created a great sensation in the regiment; some condemned, others applauded the deed; but the men had been too accustomed to death for the circumstance to dwell long upon their minds to the exclu-

sion of other matters; and although but a few days intervened until Patrick's Day, it was by that time almost forgotten.

On the eve of this day, the first major, then commanding the corps, after a brief allusion to the late murder, told the men there would be no parades next day, to permit of their enjoying themselves without restraint, cautioning them at the same time to avoid drunkenness, which would infallibly cause them to get into trouble. This pithy harangue concluded, we were dismissed from parade, and Madam Night soon spread her mantle over mundane things.

It might be the witching hour of twelve when I was awaked from a sound sleep I had fallen into despite the attacks of musquito and sand-fly, by the loud laughing and chattering of some fifty fellows, and the shrill screamings of a fife, on which some biped was assassinating "Patrick's Day." This was rather an unpleasant mode of serenading, and rendered still more so by the saint's nocturnal votaries entering our quarters *en masse*, and turning many of the cots upside down to the no small annoyance of their occupants. When they considered they had done sufficient mischief, they made their *exeunt* in the same noisy way as their entrance, and we proceeded to fasten the doors to prevent a repetition of the visit.

Patrick's Day in India is very unlike Patrick's Day in Ireland. No chilling March breeze comes fierce and biting across hill and plain; no groups of rustics wrapt in their holiday great coats with the green shamrock in the bands of their stout felts, are to be seen; no merry-looking girls with ruddy cheeks gladden the hearts of their admirers, with smiles far warmer to use the language of simile,

than the faint sunbeam which then perchance struggles for evanescent existence. No, there are none of those characteristics of the festival of the patron saint of the *Insula Sanctorum* to be met with in Sukkur. An orient sun shoots down its vertical rays, glowing with fire, so as almost to render it impossible to stir abroad, even for a few moments, with any safety, without an umbrella, or a cloth thrown over one's cap. Instead of rustic group and rosy girls, the swarthy face of the veteran, the pallid one of the younger soldier, the yellow visage of the half-caste, and the dark countenance of the Hindoostanee, &c., meet the eye. In lieu of green fields where shamrocks may be gathered in abundance, an interminable jungle is seen, from which, at wide intervals, date trees arise, which look down upon the dwarf acacia or unsightly tur-bush in something of the same way that a Gulliver might upon the inhabitants of Lilliput.

At noon, the thermometer stood at 92° in the shade. Nevertheless, the voices of persons who had been engaged in drowning their senses instead of the shamrock, were now heard in the direction of the canteen; the loud, angry tones supplying evidence that a quarrel was either brewing or already commenced. A few paces brought me to an archway of the verandah, which commanded a view of the canteen-tent, and a scene here presented itself which reminded me somewhat forcibly of home. At a distance of some fifty yards, about thirty of the men were engaged in pommelling each other as fast as they could, the hot beams descending upon their bared heads and naked shoulders. I feared that cases of *coup-de-soleil* must occur from this wanton and reckless exposure of their persons, but fortunately for them, the sun had not as yet sufficient power to cause this result. In-

stead of the combatants shouting for Whitefeet or Black-feet, Shanavast or Corovat, as would have been the case in the gem of the sea, the animosity on this occasion was among the men of the several detachments joined from time to time, who had got distinguishing appellations; and thus one fellow dared a Cabul man to appear, while others severally challenged Fresh Mutton, Barefooted, Moon Rakers, Half Gallon, or Sand Bank men to stand forth and do battle with them. One or two, however, of a draft which joined after that I had come with, and who, from being late arrivals, were not as yet properly imbued with *esprit-du-corps*, were heard to shout for the "Repale of the Union and Father Mathew." Strange ebullition of national feeling, thousands of miles from home, in a frontier station of British Empire in the east! But the war-cry of these waxed fainter and fainter as others joined the *mêlée*, until at length it could not be longer distinguished.

The battle was waged with the utmost fierceness for better than a quarter of an hour; the combatants frequently rolling over and over upon the sharp angular flint stones, to the manifest delight of the different lookers on from the verandahs commanding a view of the engagement. But the arrival of a part of the quarter-guard at last put an end to the affray, the combatants running in all directions, dreading a lodging in the guard-room.

When the canteen was again opened in the evening, the very men who had been quarrelling with one another a few hours before might be seen staggering thither together in the most loving and amicable manner imaginable to get their dram; quite prepared, however, if the whim took them, to battle it out again for the very fun of the thing. "Well," thought I, "an Irishman is an Irishman all

the world over." What struck me, however, as particularly singular, was the great affection for the day manifested by many Englishmen, who seemed completely metamorphosed into Paddies for the time being, and honoured the patron saint by libations equally long and deep. Nor did the likeness terminate here; for they might be seen in the thickest of the battle, striking indiscriminately at all who were not of the same draft with themselves, no matter which of the three nations they belonged to.

The night closed upon a painful scene in the different barracks. Men in every stage of drunkenness staggered to and fro, or lay upon the ground, or on cots, in the heavy disgusting sleep of inebriation. Ardent spirit is indeed the bane of the soldier in India, and, in numerous instances, also of those of a higher grade. Over the brow of many a scion of the aristocracy has brandy pânee shed its baleful influences, and marred the career which might have been a brilliant one.

It is absolutely astonishing to see the eagerness with which the mass of European soldiers in India endeavour to procure liquor, no matter of what description so that it produces insensibility, the sole result sought for. The propensity is equally deep-rooted and pernicious, and its indulgence is often fatal and always highly injurious to the constitution. Death, madness, premature debility, and complete disorganisation of the human system, all follow in the wake of the drunkard. *Delirium tremens* is a common disorder in military hospitals; scarcely a single week elapses in any of them without cases of this kind being under treatment; and they are mostly old soldiers whose constitutions have been shattered by continual dissipation.

In the existing state of things, every known means has been resorted to for the purpose of checking drunk-

enness, but without success; the evil still exists without the slightest symptom of diminution. Regimental canteens are closed, unless at morning and evening; and then the men are placed under restrictions which prevent them from getting more than a single dram. But here the question naturally suggests itself, why are canteens at all permitted in India? The opinion is erroneous that liquor is an absolute necessary there: at least the great majority of medical men think so. Still the government views the matter in a different light; and its order is that each regiment have its canteen, where the commissariat arrack is to be sold. That such a nuisance, therefore, as a canteen exists, is not the fault of the officer, nor yet of the soldier, but it is the fault of the supreme power. Places of this character may be useful in the United Kingdom, where the temptations to drunkenness are few in comparison, and where many things are retailed beside liquor, but in India liquor is the staple, often the sole article vended in canteens, which are there the training schools in which young lads are initiated into every vice by the old debauchee. Liquor on a long and harassing campaign may be, and I am confident is, beneficial when taken with water; but in a station in the East, where it is necessary to keep the system regular and cool, it fires the blood, and renders it doubly susceptible of disease.

During the ten months the 13th lay at Sukkur, upwards of fifty men died, the deaths averaging from four to six per month. Twenty-five, if not more, of these, lost their lives through excessive drinking. Some died from *coup-de-soleil* caught when drunk, others from apoplexy, produced by liquor, and a part from acute dysentery, resulting from the same cause. And this is generally the case in

every corps in India; half the annual deaths are caused by drunkenness; for although the indulgence of this vice may not produce immediate death, and a man may even continue to drink hard for years, the constitution daily and hourly becomes more enfeebled, and less and less fitted to resist sickness. But few habitual drunkards ever return to their native country, and those who do, return only to die after a short existence there, embittered by pain and disease, the seeds of which were sown by their own vitiated conduct.

It is true that in warm climates numberless distempers exist but the best preventive against these is temperate habits. The ratio of deaths among the higher classes of Europeans is less by eighty per cent. than among the troops. This, however, may in some measure be ascribed to the former being able to take so much better care of themselves; but most undoubtedly the great disparity is the result of comparatively regular habits, or the sole use of wine, which is not nearly so injurious as the vicious liquors drank by the soldier. Many officers in the Company's service have been known to attain a good old age, and the venerable Swartz, who laboured so long and usefully in the south, saw nearly ninety summers.

But canteens are not the only places in which soldiers obtain liquor; it is sold by most married women, and often by single men. This is strongly prohibited; nevertheless the extent to which it is practised in regiments any length of time in India is truly surprising, and the amount of evil resulting from this sort of illicit liquor-selling is incalculable. Although detection subjects a soldier to a court-martial, and a woman to being expelled the barracks and deprived of the five rupees a month allowed her by the Company, the great profit induces both parties to run the

risk. And so cunningly do they manage, that they are seldom caught either selling liquor, or with it in their possession. What is vended in this way is almost invariably of a worse quality, and more poisonous nature, than that procurable in the canteen; and the injurious effects increases in proportion. Dharroo, which resembles whiskey in its colour and taste, and which is distilled from a berry, is what is chiefly sold by stealth. It is generally purchased for six annas a bottle from the natives, and retailed at four annas a dram to the soldier, bringing a clear profit of three hundred per cent. When the regiment returned from Affghanistan, and money was plentiful, six, seven, and eight annas a dram were charged; and so great was the demand for it, even at that price, that married men who did not join until 1842 had amassed sums of money, in some cases amounting to two hundred pounds sterling, by the time I reached the corps.

I was much surprised on ascertaining that pay-sergeants* were in some instances secretly engaged in this dishonourable traffic; a part permitting their wives to sell the liquor, and others employing their armourer, or some associate, whom they admitted to a share in the profits, to retail it to the men. As a matter of course, pay-sergeants who did this, were in the power of every man of their companies, and, therefore, could not do their duty as it ought to be done; and when it is recollected how onerous the position of a pay-sergeant is, the magnitude of the evil resulting will at once be apparent.

Among the Company's European troops, liquor-selling and drunkenness is even carried to a greater extent than

* This was done up to the period of our departure from India. A short time before we left Bombay, the pay of a company was taken from one for selling liquor.

among the Queen's. This difference, in the first place, is caused by the imposition of fewer restrictions; and in the second, by the prospect a man has of never returning to his native country. Sooner or later, he imagines, he must fall a victim beneath the noxious influences of an unfriendly climate; and he drinks to drown all thoughts of the future, and in his opinion to enjoy life while he may; thus becoming accessory to his own death, and with the guilt of drunkenness stamping that of suicide upon his soul. What a noble contrast to this weak pusillanimous conduct, does that of the man present, who, eschewing the damning sin of intoxication, becomes by sobriety and good conduct (which, when united to ability, rarely is unrewarded in the Company's service), the carver of his own fortunes. It is true, that commissions are not given to men who enlist as privates in that service; which is a great injustice; but nevertheless there are numerous situations of trust and emolument, which may be, and are filled by soldiers.

There are most certainly in India a great many inducements for a man to become a drunkard. The want of good society, pernicious example, the absence of employment or innocent amusement, and that which makes the sailor fly to the spirit room when the bark is sinking, despair. Let it be remembered too, that the British soldier is a neglected man. He is looked on in every country as a being of inferior species; as the paria of the body politic; and thought to be almost incapable of moral or social improvement. His own officers despise him, and the public at large despise him. Surely then, when he finds himself treated with universal contempt, it cannot be a matter of surprise that he loses all self-respect, and becomes the reckless and degraded being

that he is. He has no one to represent him in parliament; no one to advocate his cause, as that of the peasant or mechanic is advocated; no wonder then, while these are progressing in the grand march of improvement, that he is still a being of the last century.

It is not generally known, that intemperance in the soldier is the cause of additional expense to the public. At an average, 1800 European soldiers die annually in India, and each man, by the time he reaches that country, costs government a sum of forty pounds, if not more. Now admitting that 800 out of this number are killed by drink, estimating the loss at thirty pounds per man—allowing ten pounds for intermediate service—we have a sum of 24,000*l.*, which I am certain is far under the actual amount, as regards the Anglo-Indian army alone. Very probably a sum of 40,000*l.* would not cover the loss sustained in this way in the entire army of Great Britain.

But the death of so many men, and the consequent public expense, are not the only evils resulting from intemperance. It is the cause of very many men committing crimes, who would otherwise have had a clear defaulter's sheet* during their service. Five-sevenths of the courts-martial in India, are assembled to try delinquents for habitual drunkenness, drunkenness on duty, or crimes committed while under the influence of liquor. The following document, drawn up by Adjutant (now Captain) Wood, in accordance with the instructions of Colonel Dennie, when the 13th regiment was cantoned at Cabul, in the winter of 1839-40, will prove that I am not exaggerating the injurious effects of intemperance to the soldier.

* This is a record of the offences of the soldier; it is always produced at courts-martial, &c.

"Lieutenant-Colonel Dennie again calls upon the soldiers of the 13th, to consider the mortality which for a long time has afflicted the regiment, and to reflect upon the undoubted truth, that of nearly one hundred men who have perished within the last year, the remote, if not immediate, cause of their disease and death (with few exceptions) has been liquor. Men have died since the regiment marched into the fort of Cabul, and these casualties were all the effect of ardent spirit. Will any man, therefore, who is capable of thinking or feeling, with such proofs and warnings before him, persist in so degrading and fatal a habit?

"As soldiers they must also know, that the drunkards of the corps, whether in quarters or in the field, are always the most worthless. They can neither stand heat nor cold, nor fatigue, and the more sober have their duties to perform. If any thing can convince even Irishmen* that liquor is killing them, let them only observe and remark the health and efficiency of the native regiments in garrison, with the condition of the followers of both corps (together more than four times the number of the 13th). These Indians, born in a tropical climate, never before saw nor felt snow or ice, whereas the British soldier may here be said to be at home with every advantage on his side; and yet they are healthy, and you are weak and sickly. Ask yourselves the causes of so wonderful a difference, and you must be conscious, the only answer is, that the Indians are a temperate, and that you are an intemperate people.

"The new liquor of this country has been found to be

* The impropriety of the words "even Irishmen" will be apparent to the reader, and may require explanation. Both Colonel Dennie and Captain Wood, I was given to understand, never liked Irishmen; the latter is a native of Canterbury.

more poisonous than that of Hindoostan, and when men get drunk with it, deprived of reason and sensation during its influence, they expose themselves to cold, the sure result being death.

"If life and health be objects of indifference to the soldiers of the 13th, it is hoped they are not quite insensible to character and reputation. For your own sakes then, for the honour of your regiment, abstain from the beastly vice of intemperance, and let drunkards be henceforth a term of disgrace amongst you."

In the United Kingdom little is known about the actual condition of the soldier; and when on foreign service, the mass of society are quite as familiar with the history of the Russian serf, or the South Sea islander, as they are with his. The documents supplied to the Horse Guards are never published; they are solely for the information of the military authorities, and jealously guarded from every eye but theirs. No wonder then that editors of newspapers, or political economists, know nothing about court-martial returns, or that crime in the army is chiefly the result of intemperance. Many even seem to be ignorant that there is such a thing in existence as an antiquated Mutiny Act. Hence the inquiry is rarely made, and never answered,—What can be done, to make the soldier a better man, and a more estimable member of society?

In India, where the hydra-headed evil is most prevalent, and local stimulants to drunkenness more numerous and powerful than probably in any other part of the British world, the propensity to intemperance can only be counteracted by the influence of religion, morality, or ambition. The British army presents a wide field for the labour of the Christian philanthopist. Charity, saith the

adage, begins at home; and missionaries would be fully as well employed in converting the soldier, his own countryman, as in endeavouring to convert the Hindoos. While the 13th remained at Sukkur, there was no Christian minister of any denomination there to sooth the soldier in his last hour; to teach him to die as one not without hope, and refrain from the horrid blasphemies which so often mingled with his parting cries of agony. But Sukkur, it was long objected, was an unhealthy station, and not a fitting residence for a clergyman, although he would there have a congregation of 1200 nominal Christians.

To make soldiers more moral, the supreme power should eschew canteens, suppress private liquor selling, establish saving banks, get enlightened non-commissioned officers, whose example would be beneficial, teach the soldier self-respect, give better rations, grant increased indulgence to the orderly and good, and deal with the bad even more summarily and energetically than it does at present.

With respect to ambition, it is alien to the thoughts of the British soldiery. Very few of them, indeed, are ambitious; some may be so on enlistment, but apathetic indifference soon occupies its place. Ambition is like animal life: it requires food, and an atmosphere to exist in, amid which hope sheds its luminous halos, and lends its stimulating influences. There may be a narrow-minded, a petty sort of ambition in the service; but the British army can never have a Murat or a Ney. Men who might have been such, have lived and died as private sentinels, unknown and unnoticed. Gifted scions of the aristocracy, like bright stars, sometimes arise above our military horizon, such as a Marlborough, a Wolf, or a Wellington; but

circumstances alone threw them forward, and not the fostering care which distinguishes and rewards genius.

As I have endeavoured to point out the evils resulting from intemperance, it may be thought necessary that I should now show the advantages attending sobriety. It is, in the first place, essentially necessary to the happiness of the soldier, and, if happiness is an object with him, should be the most distinguishing trait in his character. The sober man must be ever respected (comparatively speaking) by his officers, who are aware how valuable he is from the single circumstance of his being ever in the full possession of his moral and physical faculties. Besides, he can always be depended upon, and may expect some kind of promotion at one time or another. He gets at the least every indulgence the service allows; for he is rarely guilty of an offence, and possesses a certain degree of independence which the drunkard can never attain to. Lastly, he can lay by his surplus pay; so that when he is discharged, in addition to a pension, the reward of good conduct, his savings will the better enable him to pass the residue of his days in comfort.

CHAPTER XII.

IS DISMISSED FROM DRILL.—INTENSE HEAT.—ITS EFFECTS.—SENT TO WRITE IN THE ORDERLY ROOM.—DESCRIPTION OF SUKKUR.—INEFFICIENCY OF THE TROOPS IN THE HOT SEASON—SUKKUR A USELESS AND EXPENSIVE ACQUISITION.

EARLY in May, the draft of recruits I had joined with were dismissed from drill. It was quite time, for the heat was now excessive, the mercury rising to 107° in the barracks; in tents it ascended to 125°, and on some occasions to 128°, and if the thermometer was placed in the open air the mercury rose within a few degrees of boiling heat. The hot winds had been blowing since the middle of April, and one would almost imagine they had come over a sea of fire. Checs or screens made of cane were hung against the archways of the verandahs to exclude them, but these afforded us little relief, and the perspiration streamed in astonishing quantities from every pore, morning, noon, and night, as if we were about to dissolve into tears. This produced prickly heat, which was excessively disagreeable, and although it would disappear, I now ascertained, by bathing when warm, to attempt its removal in this way was dangerous in the extreme. A poor woman, who had come from England with me, did so, and died in a little time after, leaving three children behind her, one of whom was an infant but three weeks old, who survived its mother only a few days.

The checs being found to be of little use in keeping out the hot winds, tatties were made and placed against the archways. These were formed of two frames like gates, between which grass or close tops of bushes were placed and pressed tightly together. Natives kept the tatties constantly wetted from the outside, so that the wind when passing through them became deliciously cool and refreshing. No person, unless actually suffering from intense heat, can have any idea what a luxury it was to lie on a cot close behind a tattie, where one enjoyed the full benefit of the cooled breeze, and felt the drops of water from time to time plash upon one's heated brow as the coolies wetted it. These sheltered themselves from the sun by placing a few boughs against the walls of the barracks and spreading a cloth upon them, and here they would sleep or smoke their hookahs all day long; frequently neglecting their duty, till the cry of *hedherow páni wollah* from some person who felt the hot winds had found an entrance through the dried up tattie, caused them to run to their post.

Various were the means adopted by our officers to lessen the effects of the heat. Some had machines constructed on the same principle as the one used for winnowing, small tatties being placed on the apertures at each side, and thus a current of fresh air was driven into their rooms, where it was kept in constant circulation by punkahs. A machine of this description on a large scale, intended to be worked by bullocks, was in the course of erection at the officers' mess-house. Some cause, however, prevented its completion prior to our leaving the station.

On being dismissed from drill, I was appointed lance-corporal, and sent to write in the orderly-room, or regimental office, which was then at the adjutant's residence,

situated about half a mile from the cantonments. I had, therefore, to walk thither every day, sheltering myself from the sun as well as I could with a large umbrella, and by wrapping my white jacket round my head, so as to protect it from the wind. When going or returning I used frequently to make a wide detour in order to avoid a flint-hill which lay close by the road, and which, from fronting the mid-day sun, reflected back its beams with so intense a glow, that the air in its vicinity seemed as if it had been heated by a furnace. The office hours were from ten till two. At ten the sun was very strong, but the ground being cool, a walk was much pleasanter then than at two, when the sandy earth was so hot, and heated my boots to such an extent that I was always obliged to pull them off the moment I got into my quarters.

When proceeding to the orderly-room, I often passed through the Sudder bazaar, as it was only a little way out of my direct path, for the purpose of making purchases, or to have a look at the inhabitants. It was rapidly improving; new bungalows were being built daily; and buneahs from Delhi and Agra came to vend their wares in them, and to profit by the Europeans. On one occasion I was much amused by a mode of punishment I saw practised. The delinquent was placed on an ass, with his face to the animal's tail, a mode of riding deemed peculiarly disgraceful by Mahometans, and thus exhibited through the different streets of the bazaar, his offence being proclaimed at their corners, and a few strokes of a bamboo administered, while at the same time the beat of a tom-tom immediately behind, gave notice that something extraordinary was going forward. Some of the soldiers told me that a similar practice existed in Affghan-

istan; and at Cabul, Shah Soojah's executioners used to place the bodies of the executed on asses, which they led through the streets, the head dangling at one side, and the legs at the other.

The village of Sukkur, in which the Sudder bazaar of the locality is situated, stands on a slight elevation, at the vertex of an obtuse angle formed by a bend in the river, which during its annual inundation, floods the jungle to the westward, cutting off all communication, unless by water. It was doubtless owing to this circumstance that the inhabitants chose the summits of the flint-hills for burial-grounds; some of these are thickly covered with the tombs of the natives; a circumstance which informs us that Sukkur has been at one period a much more populous place than it is at present, the number of its inhabitants now not being more than 2000 in the healthy season; while after the month of August, it may be said to be deserted. The greater part of the tombs are built of sun-dried brick chunamed over, and they moulder away daily, owing to the perishable nature of these materials. A few are covered with glazed tiles of curious pattern and excellent make, arranged on the mosaic principle; while in two or three instances others are built of stone, elaborately cut, and hard brick, superior to any made in this country. The largest of these stands by the minar close to the sepoy lines. Several others, I was informed, of the same kind stood on the summits of the hills, along the river; but they had been taken down and bungalows erected on their sites, which were considered healthy from their elevated positions. None of the tombs seem to have been built longer than 200 years, and the principal ones most probably had their origin while Scinde was under

the government of the Mogul emperors, and formed a part in the division of his empire by Ackbar, of the Soubah of Mooultân; at which period it is said to have been very prosperous, Sukkur deriving much importance from its vicinity to Shikarpore, then a very wealthy city. Many of the tombs are of very recent construction, but even these are in a ruinous state; and a few years more and the greater part of those mementos of the dead will have disappeared altogether, before the hand of time, or the improvements of the European. Day after day, the Mahometans of Sukkur see the graves of their ancestors broken up, or their tombs levelled; troops now performing their evolutions on, and artillery rumbling over, their city of the dead, where all had once been solitude and silence. Still, as they do not venerate their burial-grounds to the same extent as Christians, they view all this with much indifference, without even considering the conduct of the authorities as very sacrilegious. They are still most scrupulous, however, with regard to the interment of their dead: the grave is neatly made, and bricked all round, and in this the body is placed on its side, the head westward, that the face may look towards the holy city of Mecca: it is then arched over, their superstition not allowing clay to touch the body, nor the grave to be ever opened again. Hence the vast extent of their burial-grounds.

With the exception of its few tombs and the indefensible old fort of Bukkur, there is little to interest about Sukkur. As a military station, it hardly possesses a single local advantage. Provisions, although tolerably plentiful, are of a bad quality, and vegetables, so essential to the health of troops, are not procurable. During the hot season, were all the Baloochees to the westward to pour

into Upper Scinde, not a single European could be sent against them; and when the season for military operations commences, the Malaria fever immediately appears, and the regiments there must either be removed to another climate, or a few months sees their corses crowded together in the unconsecrated graveyard of the station. Thus, for one half of the year, the great heat confines troops to their barracks, and for the other half the living will have quite enough to do to bury their dead. So long as the Indus continues its annual inundations, Sukkur will be unhealthy, and its garrison virtually useless. Troops sent thither in December and January, will remain tolerably healthy until the commencement of August, when, to preserve them in an effective state, they must be removed to Kurratchee, where they will be at some distance from the noxious damps of the marshes along the Indus, and have the benefit of the sea-breeze. Sukkur is utterly uninhabitable for four months, and all the other military stations along the river are very nearly as bad; if troops remain there, they remain to die; while at the same time the country is almost equally as unprotected as if there were not a single soldier in it.

Great hopes of emolument were entertained from the Indus being opened to our traders. It is almost unnecessary to state that these hopes have been disappointed from the difficulty of navigating the river, and our relinquishment of Affghanistan. Besides, the Scindians are a poor people, their country being chiefly a barren, inhospitable clime, scarcely supplying themselves with the necessaries of life, and yielding a revenue totally inadequate to meet the expenses entailed by its possession. In Lower Scinde the very grain and forage, requisite for the troops and the horses of the cavalry, have to be imported from

Kattywar and other districts along the coast. Steamers are sixteen days ascending to Sukkur from the mouth of the river; that is, provided they don't get aground, when a much longer time may elapse; in some instances, when the flood was subsiding, they have been left high and dry a considerable distance from the bed of the river; and the only resource was then to cut a canal, a work of time and expense, in order to get them afloat.

It will take a month to ascend to Sukkur in a jumptie, as they mostly have to be dragged with a tow-line the whole way. Thus the great difficulty of communication renders this station worthless if viewed in connexion with its extreme unhealthiness and periodical insular position.

Owing to the great expense attending the carriage of goods, articles of English manufacture sell at Sukkur for treble the first cost price. A few of the Parsee merchants of Bombay have got branch establishments there, and supply the officers, &c., at an enormous per centage, while at the same time they derive a considerable revenue from bungalows they have built, and which are let at high rents. However, when it is recollected that the Indus is 600 miles from Bombay, and Sukkur upwards of 250 from its mouth, together with the local disadvantages of the place, it cannot be surprising that high prices are looked for. Indeed, nothing but very great emolument could induce even Parsees to remain any time in so deadly a station.

CHAPTER XIII.

MANNER OF AMUSEMENT.—SOLDIERS' LIBRARIES.—LYING IN THE OPEN AIR AT NIGHT.—MODE OF LIVING.—SCINDEAN FISHING AND CROSSING THE INDUS.—RATIONS.—TAMENESS OF ANIMALS.—GRAVE-YARD.—A SOLDIER REFUSES TO ATTEND DIVINE SERVICE PARADE.—HALF-CASTE WIVES OF SOLDIERS.—DEATH OF EUROPEAN WOMEN.

It is almost impossible for one who has not been in India, to imagine how difficult it was to exist at this period, in what is considered the hottest part of the world. Languor and lassitude had settled upon the young and the old; and in the barrack-rooms, where a short time before there was noise and merriment all day long, hours would now elapse without a sentence being heard save the call for the *pâni wollah*. No one was allowed outside the verandahs, unless on duty, after nine, or before five o'clock; and such of the men as could not read, spent this long interval usually in sleeping or in playing at draughts. Even at sea I never considered books so valuable as an amusement as now; and the quantity of desultory information I gleaned from them at this time, exceeded all I ever acquired before or since. It was a matter of regret to me that I could not pursue a regular course of reading; one could rarely get the volume one wanted in the library, which, besides, was very ill chosen; a great number of the books treating of abstruse, ethical, and doctrinal topics, and much better calculated for the perusal of metaphy-

sicians and divines, than of soldiers. There was a host of old novels and romances, the larger part of the last century; but among this collection I was so fortunate as to ferret out, after much searching for something worth reading, an old edition of Scott's works, the half-defaced pages of which were conned and re-conned over by me, till I had almost got them by heart. I feel it is impossible to describe what pleasure it afforded me after returning from office, to stretch myself on my charpoy, raising my head as high as I could by doubling up my pillow, and thus to read "Guy Mannering" until I fell into my customary sleep at three o'clock; when my slumbering fancies more than once transported me to the land of cakes, and conjured up a Meg Merrilies and a Dandie Dinmont. Libraries are indeed invaluable to the soldier in India, and should, therefore, be as well chosen as possible. Give him a tolerable quantity of plain religious books, works adapted to the capacities of the uneducated; and a due portion of others of a higher stamp for the more intellectual.

Those who could not read were now almost destitute of amusement. Occasionally an itinerant Ghoorkee, with a bear panting with the heat, appeared in the cantonments; or a stray Hindoo juggler, who performed feats to the sound of a tom-tom, which would astonish even Europeans of his own craft. Exhibitions of this character, draughts, and a few plays got up by the privates, were their only resources against *ennui;* happy was he, therefore, who had cultivated a taste for reading, and thus possessed an infallible means of amusement.

The hot winds usually prevailed from ten in the morning until eleven at night, no dews falling during the season in which they blow. Owing to this circumstance it is not

considered unhealthy to sleep in the open air, and the greater part of the men in consequence carried their cots on the approach of night out of the barracks. Although I disliked doing this, feeling confident that exposure to the night air must be injurious, I found it at times impossible otherwise to get any rest; and frequently when lying in the draught of two doors, have I been obliged to drag my charpoy into the verandah, and even there the heat being too intense to permit of sleep, I have had to carry it into the open air, and place it on a hill at a short distance from the barracks, where I could get the full benefit of the breeze hot as it was. Even thus, with only a pair of wide cotton trousers (each leg of which resembled a petticoat for capaciousness), and a thin muslin shirt on, I could scarcely bear a long-cloth sheet over me; yet this was necessary to protect me from the dust, which the wind often whirled with it in considerable quantities.

The warm season had, however, brought with it one great blessing; musquito and sand-fly had disappeared at its commencement. The latter animal is so minute as to be scarcely perceptible, but is equally tormenting indoors as the musquito; it breeds in clay or sand floors, hence its name. Cow-dunging floors is the best, indeed I believe the only method of destroying it; besides, it is an operation which renders a house more healthful and cleanly. The natives perform it by first throwing cow-dung in small heaps along the floor, on which a large quantity of water is next poured so as to saturate it thoroughly, when the dung is drawn over it with the hand. This was done to the barracks several times while I was at Sukkur, and always made them cooler.

But if the hot season rid us of musquito and sand-fly, it brought myriads of ants with it, which invaded our

quarters in such numbers, as rendered it hopeless to expel them. The walls were crossed and intersected by their roads in all directions. They descended upon one's cot, traversed the gutteries and sheets, might be seen in the most concealed nooks and crannies, and even the interior of my writing-desk did not escape their visits. Two men who got drunk, and continued lying on the ground in a wash room, while in a state of insensibility, had the flesh eaten off their backs in several places by them; and one could not leave a piece of rootie by, unless it was folded carefully in a cloth and put under a guttery, without its being full of these insects. I recollect one time, shortly after our first acquaintance, coming home from a walk tolerably dry and hungry. It was dark; still, as my bobagee always put my tea in the same place, I easily found it; the remnant of my ration rootie was next procured, and sitting down on my bed I proceeded to discuss it. I took a good bite, and was masticating away like any hungry man, when suddenly I found my mouth stung in a dozen places together. On getting a light, I examined my rootie attentively, and found every pore was filled with small black ants; and I now perceived that in defiance of the law of Moses, I had been devouring flesh and blood together.

Nothing could present an appearance of more uniform sameness than the daily routine of my existence at this period. I rose at eight in the morning, got my breakfast soon after, and then read until it was time to dress and go to office. Here the same chair and the same side of the table were always occupied by me, and my work too was nearly ever of the same character. The other clerks indulged eternally in the same boyish insipid conversation. The huge drops of perspiration still tumbled along

their persons, which were prevented from damping the paper they wrote on by blotters placed between it and their hands. The same punkah wollah day after day made his appearance, and pulled away without a word, until the last of us made his exit. And the same loud guffaw was indulged, whenever he would fall asleep over his task, and a strong pull of the cord by the same clerk always next it, reminded this man of the punkah of what he was paid for. At two o'clock the same number of paces ever brought me to my quarters, when Jonoo, my bobagee, regularly thrust his dark visage through a window, at the head of my cot, laid down a plate, and simply saying, "Connae, sahib," disappeared. After discussing the rice pudding or mangoe pie, which he brought me on alternate days, for I eschewed all manner of flesh meat, it being unwholesome in the hot season, I seized a book, stretched myself on my charpoy, and in another half hour was fast asleep. I often tried to resist an inclination to sleep in the day, but every attempt was fruitless; the habit gradually became more and more powerful; and I regularly slept at last from three to five o'clock, despite the prospect of liver complaint in perspective.

In the evenings I usually walked to the river side, where at this time something was always to be seen worthy of notice; besides, it was the only pleasant place in the neighbourhood. The manner in which the natives cross the Indus is sufficiently curious. The skin of a hog, calf, or colt, is taken from the carcass without cutting it, unless at the neck and at the joints of the feet. This they partially tan, and then inflate it with air, in the same way as we do a bladder. When they wish to cross the river, the hinder extremities are

fastened round the loins by means of a cord, the fore-feet being attached to the thighs in the same manner. Supported by this, the Scindians swim the widest parts of this dangerous river, sitting if they wish almost upright, and carrying chatties of milk and butter upon their heads. Their mode of fishing is equally curious. At a favourable place they enter the river with a net fastened to a forked pole about ten-feet long, and a large chattie flat shaped, on which they will float with the current, the water being prevented from entering its aperture by the abdomen resting on it. When a fish is caught, it is slipped dexterously into the chattie, and the net is again thrust beneath the surface of the water. In this way, large quantities of fish are taken in the Indus, which abounds with them; the generality, however, are of a bony and not very palatable species. Turtles are likewise frequently caught by the fishermen.

On Friday, the sabbath of the Mahometans, the natives resorted in considerable numbers to the river-side for the purpose of bathing; the very devout afterwards visiting the Ziarat or shrine of Khaja Khizr on an island, where a hair, said to be plucked from the prophet's chin, is shown to the faithful. The Scindians, like their neighbours more to the west, may be said to have completely departed from primitive Mahometanism, the Masjeeds being now almost completely forsaken for the Ziarats.

After returning from my usual walk, I got my tea, which scarcely deserved the name, and which I could not drink for some time, as the Indus water is full of sand, which must be let fall to the bottom before it can be used. I then trimmed my lamp, and hung it close by the head of my charpoy, so that I could read by its light while reclining at my full length; and for the next five hours, that is till

eleven o'clock, books were almost invariably my sole amusement.

Although the heat was so great, the men still continued to enjoy tolerably good health; the number in hospital rarely amounting to eighty, and generally giving a mean ratio of sick of about one to every thirteen soldiers, while the deaths averaged from four to six per month; most of the casualties, however, were worn-out veterans or persons newly joined, who killed themselves by excessive drinking or exposure to the sun. This comparatively favourable state of things led many to suppose that the climate of Sukkur was not so baleful as had been said, and the editor of the *Delhi Gazette* went so far even as to state that the station had been maligned without a cause. Sir Charles Napier, likewise, seemed to be of the same opinion.

Still, although the men were as yet tolerably healthy, they had become greatly enervated by continual perspiration. Even at midnight, I have frequently seen the sentries who mounted guard in their shirt-sleeves drenched with sweat; every one gradually became paler and more debilitated; and it was obvious to the most casual and superficial observer, that sickness, if it did come, must make terrible havoc among men whose weakened systems were incapable of long resisting its attacks. Already constipation, resulting from the heat, continual lying, and bad dry food, was almost universal amongst us. Vegetables were not procurable, as already stated, and the rations still continued to be of the worst description. Indeed, many of the men never ate their ration bread at all, but gave it to the bheestie bullocks; and they at last got so accustomed to supplies of this character, that they would regularly appear at the men's cots who were

in the habit of feeding them. One of them got on the most friendly terms with me, coming every evening for the rootie I kept by me for him; but taking it into his head at last, to devour my dinner more than once while my back was turned, I was under the necessity of stopping his allowance, which was afterwards given to a less presuming favourite.

In India, the generality of animals are much tamer than in these countries. Hawks come up to the very doors, sparrows crowd into the verandahs with their little beaks opened as they pant with heat, and jackdaws will snatch the bread out of the hands of children. The cooks, when carrying victuals on their heads, hold the basket in which the messes are placed with one hand, whilst the other is employed in waving a stick above them to keep away the hawks and jackdaws. On one occasion, one of our bobagees forgot his stick; and while proceeding to the barracks, down pounced an enormous hawk, and knocked the dinners of some dozen men to the ground. In the evenings, flocks of sheep and goats might be seen proceeding through the jungle to the village, one shepherd going in front, whom they followed whichever way he turned, while another shepherd came behind, to see that none of the younger ones straggled, and to carry the weaker by turns. As a proof of an animal's tameness, and how sagacious even a bullock may become from long companionship with man, I was creditably informed (many adding their testimony to the same effect), that while the regiment was at Cawnpore, in the provinces, a bheestie bullock used regularly to waken up its master at four o'clock each morning, that being the hour he went for water to the river.

Towards the latter part of this month, one of my com-

rades died, and I accompanied him to the graveyard. I had never been there before, and wishing to read the inscriptions which I noticed on a few of the tombs, I lingered behind. The place was unsurrounded by an enclosure of any sort, and numerous mounds were scarcely discernible, from being trampled down by cattle. I could not avoid the reflection, as I traced them out, that numbers of my countrymen slept on there unknown and forgotten, and that many an ambitious heart was there hushed to rest. A few tombs in the Mahommetan fashion, built of sun-dried brick and chunamed over, marked the graves of such of the aristocracy as were buried there. Small slabs of marble, about eighteen inches square, in the end of the tombs, tell their names; and these had to be brought from Delhi, several hundred miles distant, at much expense, the Scindians not being able to polish or cut stone, the simplest arts having fallen to decay amongst them. None of the tombs were built prior to the advance of the army of the Indus, in 1838, to Affghanistan. Nevertheless, several are already crumbling away, and in a few years more the grave of the officer and sentinel will be alike undistinguishable.

The burial service had been read over my departed comrade by the captain of his company, as there was no Christian minister at the station, a circumstance which was a matter of much regret to every one. Marriages and christenings had been performed by General Sale up to his departure, by virtue of a licence granted him by the Bishop of Calcutta to that effect; and the last sad rites to the dead were usually rendered by officers commanding companies, who read over Protestants the burial service of their own ritual, and over Catholics that of

theirs. The soldiers of the latter creed always felt pleased at this toleration of principle on the part of their superiors, and expressed themselves thankful for the respect shown the departed. This affords convincing proof how wisely religious distinctions are not permitted in the army; and that the Irish soldier, despite his proneness for politics (the result of education), and the excitement with which he will always receive a *Nation* or a *Freeman*, is liberal and right-minded when removed from the noxious influences of Jesuitical charlatanism.

We had a parade every Sunday for divine service, an officer reading prayers for the Protestants while another, (the only Catholic one in the corps) performed the same office for those of his own faith. One of the latter demurred against listening to a layman reading prayers, and told the colonel his conscience would not permit his attending chapel parade. He was very near getting a court-martial for his contumacy, however orthodox; but the colonel at last considered it sufficient punishment to have him placed half way between the squares formed by the Catholic and Protestant parties on Sundays, and there to remain until they were dismissed. As he was thus a subject of derision to his comrades, and saw there was no chance of escaping the parade, he was soon glad to be allowed to remain with his company, and forego his conscientious scruples.

The only European troops at Sukkur, beside our corps, was a company of horse artillery, who were as dissolute a body of men as I ever met with, and nearly an equitable mixture of English, Irish, and Scotch. A few of them had very pretty half-caste wives, whom they had got out of the Byculla orphan school at Bombay, where any soldier of good character and possessed of capital to com-

mence house-keeping, may obtain a helpmate. These girls are tolerably well educated, and would make grateful and affectionate wives, were it not that soldiers in general make such bad husbands. For a while after marriage they may get on pretty well, but they soon become negligent, and return drunk to their berths. Half-caste women are almost invariably passionate and vindictive, readily taking offence, especially if they think that it is offered in consequence of their colour; and hence they view the indifference of their European husbands in the worst possible light—neglect their household duties as a matter of course; and will soon learn to drink, and smoke the hookah all day long if they can; becoming slatterns in every sense of the word. It must, however, be admitted that in any country a bad, dissolute husband can scarcely fail to make a bad wife; unless, indeed, the wife is a strong-minded person, who thoroughly knows the duties of her station.

In countries like Ireland, were there is such a prolific supply of the gentler sex, and where so many are destined neither to be wooed nor won, becoming in due time that half-nondescript sort of animal termed old maids, persons can form no idea of the scarcity of white women in India. There, he is a fortunate man who has two or three tolerable looking daughters on the eve of womanhood; he requires no fortunes to get them off his hands; but, on the contrary, propitiatory presents shower in upon him from a dozen individuals, all ready to pay handsomely in that way, or any other, for being permitted to marry into his family. Nor need the death of a husband be a matter of much regret to a woman, for she is besieged by admirers while the tears which decency demands are still coursing one another down her cheeks. When in Calcutta, I was

told it was no uncommon thing for men in the Company's civil employment to come regularly there to inquire if there were any decent soldiers' widows to be had; and I knew one woman personally who was the wife of three husbands in six months, and another who had married the fifth husband, having children by every one of them.

This scarcity of European women is the reason why half-castes are increasing so rapidly in India. Captain Hall thinks that the Anglo-Indian empire will yet be subverted by them, and that their numbers and education will, at no very distant period, render them formidable rivals of their fairer-skinned brethren of the West. Government ought, therefore, attentively to consider this matter; and if they would prevent the threatened danger, should send annual cargoes of women, suitableto be the wives of soldiers, to India. As the present race of half-castes, after a few intermarriages, would become as dark as the other natives of Hindoostan, there being no danger of a new generation of them at the same time arising, our dominions in the East would thus be saved.

CHAPTER XIV.

IMPROVEMENTS IN THE CANTONMENTS.—WAGES OF NATIVES.—IS APPOINTED ORDERLY-ROOM CLERK.—EXECUTION OF A MURDERER.—ENGLISH AND IRISH SOLDIERS COMPARED.—BAZAAR CYPRIANS.—LAXITY OF MORALS IN THE EAST.—BATTA.—WEATHER BECOMES COOLER.—MUTINY OF THE 64TH.—A SERGEANT MAJOR ATTEMPTS TO COMMIT SUICIDE.

The month of June came on without bringing with it any diminution of the heat. Meanwhile, improvements having the comfort and convenience of the troops for their object, were rapidly progressing. Native felons were daily employed in levelling the graves and tombs between the barracks. A canteen was completed, and a school-house being erected; while at the same time dams were in the course of construction on the bank of the river to keep it, during the annual overflowing, from flooding the neighbourhood of the cantonments. All this was done at a trifling expense from the cheapness of labour, tradesmen only receiving four annas per diem, labourers two annas, and women and boys one or one and a half. For this remuneration the Scindians would toil all day long without a murmur. Like the Hindoostanees, they are a patient, laborious people, and very servile. While going to office, bodies of them proceeding to work would frequently have to cross the path along which I was walking; and although they might have done so before I could

reach them, their steward would cause them to halt at some distance till I had first passed.

Towards the middle of the month, I was promoted to the rank of orderly-room clerk; and being now a staff-sergeant, had to leave the company I had hitherto been in and join the staff company. My situation was greatly improved by this change, my pay being doubled; and occupying a room with another sergeant, I enjoyed a tolerable degree of privacy, and could read or amuse myself as I liked without being intruded upon by either the drunk or sober. Besides, I was now admitted to the sergeants'-room in the canteen, where newspapers were constantly to be had; and few can imagine, unless similarly situated, with what eager satisfaction I made myself acquainted with the condition of things in my native and sister countries. The decorations of this room were characteristic of the corps. Over one door, in large black letters, I read Jellalabad, 7th April; and over the other Ghuznee, 23rd July; while a painting of the most *outre* kind, purposing to be a representation of the former action, covered the entire of a cross wall.

About this time, the warrant for the execution of the murderer of Slack was received from the Governor-General and Council, the only authority in India which can inflict death on a European soldier. Up to the moment he heard he must die, the unhappy man had buoyed himself up with the hope that he would escape at the most with transportation for life.

Nothing can be more solemn or impressive than a military execution. On this occasion, all the troops at the station were drawn up so as to form three sides of a square, the gallows occupying the centre of the vacant side. When every preparation was made, a guard pro-

ceeded to the criminal's cell, who was dressed in a white gown, and had his irons knocked off. He was then placed in a dooly, and borne to the left flank of the troops, where the procession was already formed. First went the band, playing the "Dead March," with drums muffled, next a portion of the guard, followed by four soldiers bearing a coffin. After these came the criminal, accompanied by a friend in lieu of a clergyman; the rear was brought up by the remainder of the guard. Thus marshalled, the procession moved slowly along inside the square, till it reached the gallows, at the foot of which the coffin was placed, the band then filing off to the rear of the regiment. The criminal, left alone with his guard and executioner, now mounted the platform with a firm step, the rope was adjusted round his neck. "Mother, mother!" exclaimed the unhappy man, "what will you say to this!" the next moment the drop fell, and he was swinging in mid-air.

After the lapse of a few minutes, the several regiments marched off the ground in column of sections, getting the word "eyes left" as they passed the gallows, a few paces beyond which the bands struck up lively quick steps. For some time afterwards the white-clad corse remained suspended from the disgraceful tree. The soldier, whose existence had thus been terminated, was but a mere youth; having scarcely attained his twentieth year. He was buried by the side of the man whom he had murdered, over whom the sergeants of the corps had already erected a handsome tomb.

It is a singular fact that nearly the whole of the murders in the British army are perpetrated by Irishmen. Those in the 13th, I was given to understand, as in the present instance, had been all committed by my country-

men, of which, for many years it has been principally composed. This circumstance is easily accounted for; the Irish are more vindictive and revengeful than either the English or Scotch. Education no doubt tends to do away with those unamiable national characteristics, but soldiers are not educated men, and from the peculiar circumstances of their situation, no body of people exhibit quicker or more prominently native disposition than they do. An English corps is far more easily ruled, and the reins of discipline may be drawn tighter than with an Irish regiment.

John is an obtuse sort of animal, caring little about kind words or suavity of manner on the part of an officer, provided he is well fed and not over worked, a condition he considers as the very *summum bonum* of existence. But this is not the case with Paddy, who is a faithful chronicler of insults, personal or national, which are related to recruit after recruit, and thus transmitted down for years, somewhat similar to the traditions which form a part of his own creed. Many a time have I heard the improper or unwise language or conduct of an officer severely animadverted upon, who, perhaps, had been dead or quitted the corps many years previous. On the other hand, a good word and kind treatment is the sesame to Paddy's heart, where such are treasured up till it ceases to vibrate.

The barrack I lived in, at this period, overlooked the principal thoroughfare leading to the Sudder bazaar; and in the evenings, it was a source of much amusement to sit in the open air and watch the natives as they passed to and fro beneath. The different grades could be distinguished by their dress. The Khitmagar might be known from the other Hindoo or Mussulman camp fol-

lowers by his garments of spotless white, and neatly folded turban set jauntily at one side; while the dirty habiliments of the Scindian pointed him out, although one might not see his features—much coarser and more strongly marked than those of the Hindoostanee. But the oddest of the passers to and fro, were the loll bazaar women, or cyprians of the cantonments, who accompany troops even on long and harassing marches. Women of the *pavé* in these countries must feel surprised to see persons of their class in India taking the air, mounted astride on yaboos, and frequently riding double like schoolboys. Nothing, indeed, can be more droll than a cortège of this description. The lean-looking yaboos; the wide trousers of the women, tight around the ancles, which are ornamented with silver bangles; the singularity of the remainder of their costume, their dark features, and the enormous rings pendant from their noses; contributed to form a subject with the associations of place worthy the pencil of a Cruikshank.

In Scinde the most beautiful women seek to make a profit of their persons. Shikarpore, Sehwan, and Hyderabad, are noted for their courtesans, many of whom are fair, and apparently of a different race from the other inhabitants, while at the same time their charms are heightened by every appliance of dress and ornament, after the fashion of their country. Even the slippers of these belles are elaborately embroidered with gold and silver wire, one foot being withdrawn from its covering in the evenings, when seated on charpoys in front of their dwellings, in order to display the rings of the precious metals which in some instances literally cover their toes. Throughout all India, as well as in Scinde, women of this class exist in vast numbers, the large towns being full of brothels.

Mahometan cities especially teem with pollution, from the latitude allowed by that creed; and Peshawur and Cabul are said to be the Gomorrahs of our own times. Ceylon may be considered as a second Cyprus.

Nor are the Europeans in general much behind the natives in libidinous practices. Many in the upper walks of life keep regular harems, and assimilate themselves to their Mahometan neighbours, scarcely preserving even the shadow of Christianity; while the lower grades exceed in sensuality the most reckless profligates of our largest cities. Although continually surrounded by pestilence and death, the white man in India, in the majority of cases, rarely bestows a thought upon religion. A luxurious climate tends to produce effeminate habits, and eventually, where there is not strength of principle in either sex, leads to criminal indulgence.

The remainder of June, and the earlier part of the month of July, passed away without producing an event worth noting. About the middle of the month, the mercury fell two degrees; and my nappie assured me that the bout ghurrum minaghs, or very hot months were over, an event which I often and earnestly prayed for.

The grand topic of conversation at this period, was the six months batta we were about to receive, which had been granted by Lord Ellenborough as a consideration for services in Scinde, from the unhealthiness of its climate. The artillery had been paid it early in the month, and the next day three of them died from excessive drinking. We got our batta the day before the anniversary of Ghuznee, and the canteen was then wisely thrown open without any restrictions, the time affording a plausible pretext for giving the men every indulgence.

Any one who wished, was allowed to bring liquor into the barracks, and for three days there was a scene of desperate drunkenness. The sergeant of the canteen assured me that during this period his receipts were upwards of 10,000 rupees (1000*l.* sterling) for liquor. Yet notwithstanding the expenditure of this large sum, there was remitted to the agents in England shortly after, by the non-commissioned officers and privates of the corps, no less a sum than 1500*l.* This proved that more of the batta was made a good than a bad use of, at least at that time; and had there been a savings' bank in the regiment, I am certain that much more would have been laid by.

As August approached, the nights became sensibly cooler, the hot winds blowing for a much shorter period than heretofore. The men, therefore, began to look more cheerful; and in the evenings would assemble in groups in front of their barracks, and while away an hour or two by conversation. I heard many a tale of Affghanistan, and many a characteristic story of their leaders there. Hopes on these occasions were frequently expressed, that the coming sickly season would not be so bad as the preceding one, which had set in very early, and had been of the most deadly character. As yet the river was not much swollen, and many thought from the lateness of the period, it would not rise higher, and that the banks made by order of General Hunter, who commanded the station, would prevent the vicinity of the cantonments from being flooded, and consequently the men must continue as healthy as they were.

By the 4th of August, the river had risen considerably, the ferry across to Roree, becoming daily more dangerous. Still the natives attempted it, induced by the profit derived

from an intercourse with the cantonments, until at last, two boats, with one hundred and fifty people in them, were dashed against one another and sunk, every soul on board being drowned. An occurrence of this calamitous character in Europe, would have supplied material for many a newspaper article, but here the circumstance was scarcely noticed; although the accident had happened within half a mile of the cantonments, the majority of the regiment never heard a word about it; so little is native life valued in India.

A great sensation was created at this period, by the mutiny of the 64th Bengal sepoys. This corps had formed a part of Brigadier Wild's brigade, which attempted, without success, to force the Khyber Pass in 1842. It was rumoured, that even then, there was considerable disaffection amongst the men, who were chiefly Hindoos, in consequence of being compelled to cross the Indus, which their superstition does not allow of*. Added to this, the fate of the Cabul army made them dislike going forward.

At Ferozepore, where the seeds of disaffection were so widely scattered among the native corps in the Army of Observation, by the intrigues of the Sikhs, who sedulously endeavoured by the offers of money to seduce them from their allegiance, a bad spirit again became apparent in the 64th. On the breaking up of that army, they were ordered to Scinde; and while *en route* thither, broke out into open mutiny, and even, it was said, seized their colours. They were, however, again induced to proceed, by a promise on the part of their commanding officer, Colonel Mosely, that government would give them extra

* Owing to this circumstance, the Emperor Ackbar gave the name of Attok to the fort he erected at the junction of the Cabul with the Indus river: Attok means forbidden.

pay, and extraordinary indulgences for service in Scinde. They arrived at Sukkur in the commencement of the hot season, and were shortly afterwards sent to Shikarpore, where, not finding the promises of their colonel made good, they mutinied again.

Sepoys place the most implicit reliance on the word of their European officers, whom they believe to be too honourable to tell a lie. When they found themselves deceived, therefore, the indignation of the 64th was principally levelled against their white superiors, whom they either pelted, or beat off their parade ground. Their next step was to place the native commissioned and non-commissioned officers under strict surveillance, as not one of them could be induced to join them; and then, forming a council, they elected a governor-general, a commander-in-chief, and officers of companies.

In this state, General Hunter found the 64th, on proceeding to Shikarpore from Sukkur, for the purpose of ascertaining the exact position of matters. The regiment then placed the coping-stone on their mutinous conduct, by pelting him out of their lines. Nothing, however, could be done at Shikarpore by way of punishing them, there being no European troops stationed there, and the weather being still too hot to move the 13th out of cantonments, a course which besides would have put the mutineers on their guard, and must therefore cause a serious loss of life. Under these circumstances, the old general's plan evinced considerable tact and cunning. A general order was issued by him for the 64th at once to proceed to Delhi, by a route which would be supplied at Sukkur, on their arrival there, their colonel meanwhile being placed under arrest.

The 64th, thinking they were about to be sent to Delhi

for the express purpose of having their wrongs redressed, unhesitatingly marched to Sukkur, under the command of their adjutant. On arrival there, they were not permitted to occupy the sepoy barracks, being directed to encamp at a short distance from the fort on the bank of the river, which they were further ordered to hold themselves in readiness to cross. After remaining here for a few days, during which no intercourse was permitted between them and the other troops, they were ordered to parade, the general having proposals to make them. They now perceived how completely they were trapped. The boats in the vicinity had all been moved down the river to prevent them from crossing to the opposite bank; guns in the fort were pointed so as to command their camp; and batteries supported by the 13th placed in a way which cut them off from the Shikarpore and Sukkur roads. Thus hemmed in, the 64th saw they must submit or be annihilated; and their ranks being opened, the general, with the assistance of the native officers, picked out thirty-nine of the ring-leaders of the mutiny, who were immediately disarmed, and marched down to our guard-house. Here they were all ironed the pseudo commander-in-chief and governor-general being placed apart from the others in the solitary cells.

Owing to the admirable arrangements of General Hunter, the 64th was thus compelled to submit without bloodshed. Had they not done so, the massacre of Barakpore would have been enacted over again, and the innocent slaughtered indiscriminately with the guilty. Few indeed of the regiment would ever have quitted the bank of the river alive.

After the suppression of this dangerous mutiny, the general issued an order, prohibiting individuals from com-

municating with the press regarding it, and expressing a hope that the supreme power would approve his conduct throughout the affair, and his having pardoned the regiment in consequence of giving up the ringleaders.

The order was strictly complied with; and the "Delhi Gazette" and other papers could only in consequence supply for a length of time the most vague and indistinct information, derived from many-tongued rumour, regarding the mutiny; a circumstance which afforded several of us much amusement.

From a general order of Sir Charles Napier, on his becoming aware of how the 64th had been dealt with, it appeared that he had received full powers to disband that corps. In consequence, however, of General Hunter having already acceded pardon, he forebore the exercise of the authority with which he was armed; contenting himself with ordering the regiment to be deprived of its colours. Accordingly, a company of the 13th, made up to one hundred rank and file, marched to the sepoy lines when the 64th were assembled on parade, and taking away their colours, deposited them in the fort of Bukkur. The colours were, however, shortly afterwards restored to them.

By the month of August the mutineers in our guard-room had all been tried, and much conjecture was afloat as to what would be their fate; as to themselves, they imagined, with one or two exceptions, that they would all be put to death. A court of inquiry had likewise sat to investigate the conduct of Colonel Mosely,* and it was generally understood he was to undergo the ordeal of a general court-martial.

Every evening a part of the guard conducted their

* He was afterwards cashiered.

sepoy prisoners to the river, where they washed themselves, and filled their jumboos with water. They could only walk very slowly from being ironed, and frequently had to stop when the rings would pain them, appearing on these occasions extremely dejected. Shortly after they were confined, a detachment on escort duty arrived from Delhi, and were ordered to occupy a part of the 64th lines. They expressed much unwillingness to do this, alleging that they could not think of living with mutineers; and begged they might be sent somewhere by themselves. Tents were accordingly pitched for them close to our main guard, and they did duty with the 13th until it quitted Sukkur.

Scarcely had the excitement caused by the mutiny of the 64th subsided, when we had a long general order from Sir Charles Napier, relative to an occurrence in a regiment of irregular cavalry stationed at Shikarpore; the major commanding which had ordered the sergeant-major, who was a European, to visit the officers daily in succession, for the purpose of teaching them sword drill. The man remonstrated; stating that exposure to the sun, while going from one bungalow to another, would kill him. Nevertheless, the major would not rescind his order; and the consequence was, that the sergeant-major attempted to commit suicide, inflicting a dangerous wound. When Sir Charles heard of the occurrence, he directed it to be thoroughly investigated, and found it necessary to reprimand the major most severely for his inhuman conduct, which he said, "was sufficient to render any man disgusted with the *noblest* service in the world." The document concluded by admonishing the sergeant of the impiety of his conduct.

CHAPTER XV.

RIVER ATTAINS ITS FULL HEIGHT, AND BEGINS TO SUBSIDE.—INCREASE OF SICK.—IS ATTACKED WITH MALARIA FEVER.—EXECUTION OF THE RINGLEADERS IN THE MUTINY OF THE 64TH SEPOYS.—DEPARTURE FROM SUKKUR.—CONDUCT OF THE CAMP FOLLOWERS.—REACHES SEWHAN.—MUSQUITOES.—BAGGAGE GUARD OF THE 78TH HIGHLANDERS.—BOATMEN OF THE INDUS.—NUMBER OF SICK.—SHIKARGAHS OF THE AMEERS.—JOURNEY TO THE CAMP.—CONTINUES THE MARCH.—PRISONERS ESCAPE.—MARCHING IN INDIA.—ARRIVES AT KURRATCHEE.—HOSPITAL ESTABLISHMENT.—OCCURRENCES WHILE IN HOSPITAL.—MIRAGE OF THE DESERT.

By the middle of August the river had reached its full height, the opposite bank above the fort of Bukkur being scarcely discernible. At the fort, the velocity of the current, from a vast body of water being compressed into a narrow space by rocks on either side, was terrific. Dangerous lines of breakers were formed in many places; and as no boat could live on the river, the guard of thirty men which mounted daily there could not be relieved.

The Indus was now more than fifteen feet higher than at low water, yet the natives assured me it was not so high as it had been the preceding year, and the jungle to the westward presented the appearance of one vast lake, as far as the eye could reach, navigable for the largest boats, which sailed safely over the tops of bushes, banks, &c. &c., to Shikarpore. The embankments made to keep out the water from the vicinity of the cantonments were now

found to be totally useless, and ponds of many feet in depth were formed close by the barracks.

After the 18th of the month the river began to fall, and during the ensuing week there was a slight increase of sick. Up to the present period I had escaped sickness, and as we now received orders to hold ourselves in readiness to proceed to Kurratchee, I hoped I should not be attacked with it.

As September approached, the Indus had sank to within a few feet of low-water mark, the sick having increased meanwhile to 180 or thereabouts. We were very busy in our office at this period, in consequence of some of the clerks being ill, and I was therefore obliged to work longer than usual in order to get the monthly returns completed at the proper time.

On the evening of the 1st of September, after returning to my room, I felt a burning heat all over my person; still I did not think I had caught the malaria fever, and being somewhat better next morning went to office as usual. Towards night the same symptoms again attacked me, together with thirst; and a soldier who saw me in this state told me it was fever, and advised me to go at once to the hospital. Wishing, however, to get the returns completed, I would not do so, but went to office again on the following day, although very ill.

On the 4th, the left wing embarked in boats for Kotree, whence they were to march to Kurratchee, and my office business being now completed, I determined to go to hospital, where an emetic was given me on my arrival, and shortly afterwards a cathartic. These medicines, with quinine, were now given to every fever patient; but whatever their efficacy might have been, my illness returned again next day with tenfold violence, and I had to be

bled in both arms, and to get my head shaved, which rid me completely of fever. Still, short as my term of sickness had been, I felt much debilitated.

The men now began to crowd very fast into hospital, from twenty to thirty being admitted daily; and although the building was capable of accommodating 200 sick, in a few days it became so thronged, that numbers had to be placed in the verandahs. The apothecary and his assistants were constantly employed in bleeding and administering medicine, the hospital exhibiting a scene of sickness and suffering impossible to describe.

When a week in hospital, I was sent to the recovery-ward; my mouth being now covered with sores like those produced by severe colds, usual to persons getting well of this fever. By the 12th I was tolerably recruited, and witnessed from an eminence near the hospital the execution of six of the principal mutineers of the 64th. On the preceding evening, a curious scene of superstition had occurred: a holy cow was driven by a Brahmin to the cells where they were confined, the tail of the animal being placed with much ceremony in a criminal's hand. A chattie of water was next brought, into which the prisoner put ten rupees, the sum to be paid for the privilege of grasping the cow's tail, when the Brahmin repeated a brief invocation, at the conclusion of which the sepoy relinquished his hold of the animal and returned to his cell with the air of a man quite content to die, his place being supplied by another, who went through a similar ceremony. As the Governor-General was retiring, he remarked that when he was dead he would turn into a kutha, and bite Hunter Sahib.

Nothing could be more singular than the manner in which these Hindoos, who were all followers of Vishnu,

having the horizontal mark upon their foreheads, met their deaths. They chattered about the most indifferent matters, until directed to mount the platform, above which swung a noose for each; and as they would not permit one of a lower caste to touch them lest they might be defiled, pinioned as they were, they contrived to slip these on their necks themselves. Some of them even coolly examined several of the cords until they saw one to their liking; and two of them resolutely swung themselves off the platform ere it was taken away.

Apprehensions were entertained that the 64th might attempt a rescue, and the right wing of the 13th was formed so as to support the guns of the horse artillery, pointed towards it; but no disposition of this sort was evinced, the sepoys looking quietly on as their comrades suffered.

The fever now began to afflict the natives, and many of them closed their houses and fled from the place. On the 16th, a steamer arrived with the sick, and part of the women of the 78th Highlanders on board, that being the corps about to relieve us. The Highlanders had only between thirty and forty men sick, and none of these were bad cases. There was not, I am certain, a more efficient corps in India at that time; and nothing could have betrayed more recklessness of purpose, or more insensibility to the claims of humanity, than the conduct of him who sent them to Sukkur to die.

Every individual gifted with common sense must be aware that the soldiers of any state are liable to be sent to climates uncongenial to their constitutions, when it is necessary for the public weal, while at the same time wanton exposure of even mercenaries is alike impolitic and inhuman. Impolitic, because it diminishes the resources of a state, which should be reserved for real

exigencies, and engenders a feeling of disgust which may finally generate into a spirit of disaffection. Inhuman, because it shows an utter disregard for the lives of men in the lower walks of life, clearly evincing that ambition would ruthlessly trample on the most hallowed feelings among the sons of Adam, to gratify the yearnings of its own grasping spirit.

On the 17th I was discharged from hospital; and when entering the barrack-room, which I had left crowded with men, its desolate appearance struck me forcibly. Half the company were in hospital, and the greater part of the remaining half were lying on their charpoys and covered over with gutteries, being ill with the fever.

Next morning I was again attacked with fever, and so severely, that I had to go into hospital on the approach of evening; there the greatest confusion prevailed, as the sick were immediately to embark in the boats now ready to convey them to Tattah. These had huts constructed on them of cane plastered with mud, so as to exclude the sun; mats being spread on the bottom of the boats, on which we placed our gutteries. Under existing circumstances, better accommodations could not have been provided for the sick, and General Hunter himself came several times to see that every thing was done to make them as comfortable as possible. The solicitude he evinced for them was gratefully remembered; and frequently during our descent of the river, and long afterwards, have I heard the men, in terms of the warmest admiration, speak of the kindly conduct of the "good old general," as they called him.

At ten o'clock, the baggage having been embarked, the boats pushed off from the bank, and as we gained the centre of the river, a feeling of gratitude to Providence was uppermost in my mind, for having been spared in a

place dreaded alike by the European and the Hindoostanee. A steamer with a part of the 78th regiment on board now passed us; they appeared in excellent health and spirits, little imagining that such numbers of their corps were destined never to quit Sukkur.

At night the fleet brought to, at a part of the country tolerably open and free from brushwood; and the fever having left me, I went on the bank to have a walk; but soon getting tired, I was glad to sit down on the stump of a decayed tree, and here, undisturbed by a single sound, thoughts of home obtruded themselves on my mind. In a foreign land, so long as a person continues healthy, the daily performance of his duties, strange scenes and strange faces, afford his mind ample amusement, and prevent it from dwelling very long, or very sadly, on reminiscences of home. But when sickness debilitates the body, and bows down the spirit, then will the exile's heart turn homeward with the fondest yearnings, and sigh for the soothing attentions of those it loves. How earnestly does the sick man long for the green fields of fatherland, as his gaze rests unrefreshed upon the sandy desert; and what would he not give for the cool breezes of his native clime, as his brow throbs with the hot winds of the tropics?

The following morning at an early hour, we were again drifting, stern foremost, or broadside with the current; the usual way of sailing down the Indus in a jumptie, when the dandies are too lazy, or consider it unnecessary to ply their sweeps. Although I had no attack of fever during the day, it nevertheless passed away heavily, being destitute of books or any means of amusement. In the evening, we came to a delightful spot; corn in blossom, with patches of sugar cane and indigo, lining the bank for a considerable distance. After being so long accustomed to look on the barren jungle around our cantonments at

Sukkur, this was a most refreshing scene; while at the same time, the sweet smell of the flowers wafted on the cool evening breeze, was grateful and reviving to an invalid.

Quitting the boat as soon as it was properly secured, I proceeded along a winding-path which led from the river, the crops on either side rising high above my head, and after a walk of a few hundred yards, came suddenly upon a small village, hitherto concealed from my view by sugar-cane. The huts were formed of acacia boughs, interwoven over which a luxuriant creeping plant was trained; its large round leaves, from amid which peeped a pretty white flower, forming a delightful shade against the sun. A few noble trees stood close by, among the branches of which the ring-dove was cooing, while a variety of other birds seemed to make every spray musical, despite the shrill screamings of the green parrot. As I approached the huts, several children in a state of nudity, with the usual string * tied above the hips, scampered away in a fright to conceal themselves; or clung to their mothers, who were employed in spinning with the distaff, or in grinding corn with the hand-mill—which is the same as the Irish querin—for their evening meal.

The scene thus presented, was of the most primitive character; and probably similar to that which might have met the eye of the first European who crossed the Indus; for time has effected but little reformation in the people of India, and the bordering countries. Grinding at the mill is performed in the same way now as it was in our Saviour's time, and the bullock still draws by means of a frame or wooden yoke upon the neck. Indeed, every thing in use among the natives of their own manufacture, evinces

* Native children have always a string tied around them above the hips.

great antiquity of invention; and at almost every step one takes, something is seen to illustrate Holy Writ.

At a short distance from the village, was an enclosed space fenced round with thorn bushes, in which were several flowering plants. Drawing a bush aside, I entered, and found it to be chiefly filled by a stunted shrub, with a leaf resembling that of the vine which produces the berry that dharroo is distilled from; so that it was evident, simple as the villagers appeared to be, they were partial to intoxicating liquors. After procuring a few flowers, I returned towards the river; and a short way from the huts, passed a venerable old man with a long silver beard of the most patriarchal character, who made me a profound salaam, by placing his hand impressively against his forehead, and inclining his body; when a few paces beyond where he stood, I heard him exclaim in a tone of surprise, "Allah ul Allah!" He had probably never seen a European before, as the steamers did not stop at this place. The cattle of these ryots were standing quietly around their charpoys placed beneath the trees, undisturbed by the barking of dogs, ever the noisy guardians of an Indian village, which had greeted my approach.

On reaching the boats, I found the dandies and hospital followers had made sad havock among the corn near the river, which they had trampled down in all directions, the poor ryots having no resource but patient submission. They could not, like the sturdy British farmer, bring an action for trespass; and had to stand by passively, while their crops were being destroyed after all their labour of irrigating and planting.

A steamer had accompanied the fleet from Sukkur, having the convalescents on board, and next day about noon she passed the boat of which I had charge, and

shortly after, while at half speed, was run right against the bank by the man at the wheel, her stem rising completely out of the water. I feared at the moment she must have received serious injury, and that at the least her paddle-box was broken, as it grated against the bank, when she wore round, tearing down several yards of it; but fortunately she sustained no damage whatever; nevertheless, the sailor who let her run against the bank was immediately placed under arrest, and subsequently tried for misconduct.

In the evening we made the Sehwan creek, where we brought to for the night, an almost impervious jungle lining the bank and cutting us off from the town. Being desirous of seeing the noted ziarat of Lall-Shah-Baz, at this place, I quitted the boat as soon as possible, and proceeded along a cow track, which I imagined must lead me in the proper direction; but several others crossing it, I lost my way, and was fain to return by another path covered with sedge, of from eight to ten feet in height, having a large downy blossom which adhered firmly to my clothes. This jungle concealed several large stagnant pools, and generated musquitoes in myriads, which so annoyed me during the night, that I was in a complete state of frenzy. Go where I would, or do what I would, they were still buzzing about my ears; and in the morning, my face and hands bore ample evidence of the zest with which they had feasted on me.

Of the many sources of petty annoyance in tropical climes, the musquito is the most tormenting. Wearied, and enervated with the excessive heat, you just begin to doze, when you hear its intolerable buzz close by your ear, which is immediately slapped with sufficient force to annihilate a host of such plaguey insects. Nevertheless,

the buzz buzz is still heard; now at a little distance, and now close by; and presently, in spite of repeated clappings and slappings, which make the ear tingle with pain, a strange itching sensation is felt which renders you aware that you are bitten. The individual fresh from Europe, supplies a luxurious repast to the musquito, as the blood has not yet been weakened by sickness, or influences of climate; and I have known several men who had to go into hospital and remain there a considerable time, from scratching their bites, which festered and became sore. When I first arrived in India, I suffered equally with others, and almost envied the worn out pallid looking veteran, who told me that musquito or sand-fly never troubled him, and bared his arm free from blotch or scratch, to prove the truth of his assertion.

The rich adopt a curtain of a light texture, as a protection against this insect; but the soldier who considers a sleep upon a charpoy at times a luxury, never thinks of such a thing; and if he can protect the remainder of his body with running strings which tighten his shirt and trousers on his wrist and ancles, his feet being defended with stockings, willingly leaves his hands and face to be feasted on. The arms and legs of grown persons are the principal points of attack; with children, however, this is not the case, and I have frequently seen those born in Europe one entire mass of sores. Country born children are but little annoyed, comparatively speaking; and after a residence of a year or two, persons of every age, cease to be much troubled by the musquito*, as the blood by that time becomes weak.

On the morning of the 21st, after we had discussed our

* A mixture of vinegar and laudanum allays, in some measure, the irritation resulting from the bite of this insect.

tea, and the ill-baked bread served out to us for breakfast, the signal to sail was given, and the boats pushed off into the middle of the river. A magnificent sheet of water now met the eye, gradually narrowing towards the base of a hill, rising abruptly from its further extremity, the course of the river being concealed by a sudden bend to the left. Here a sandbank stretched from bank to bank; causing a line of breakers formidable to flat-bottomed boats; beyond which the water was deep and undisturbed, save by the gambols of fishes nearly as large as porpoises, or the small jumpties of the Sehwanese fishermen.

As we neared the breakers, owing to the cross and counter currents, our fleet was scattered in all directions; the dandies in the several jumpties making the most laborious exertions to cross them at the safest points. This object was at length safely accomplished, although there was a sheer descent of five feet in some parts, and several boats were whirled round a considerable time with the eddies.

When clear of the Sehwan hills the day became very windy, and as the river now averaged from four to ten miles in breadth, it was agitated like the sea during a smart breeze, the motion of the boat making me very ill. About noon we met three jumpties laden with the heavy baggage of the 78th, the guard of which consisted of a sergeant and eighteen rank and file, who were all sick of fever, and so very weak that they were scarcely able to bury one of their comrades, who had died during the preceding night. Without a medical person with them, and destitute of medicine, it is difficult to conceive the deplorable state of these men. They had no screen to shade them from the sun, or to protect them from the unwhole-

some night dews, which now fell heavily; they had no cook nor victuals proper for sick men; and thus situated a fortnight must elapse before they could hope to arrive at Sukkur.

Poor fellows! sick and destitute in the wilderness, their condition could hardly be worse. But such are the scenes which chequer the life of a soldier, and are far more trying to him than the battle field. We lay to for some time in order to permit of their getting medicine, and receiving such other assistance as could be rendered them. Our principal surgeon, a kind and humane man, told me afterwards that had he been present at the time he would have taken every man of them back with him, as their lives were of more consequence than the baggage. It is a doubtful matter whether their colonel was of the same opinion.

In the evening we stopped at a fine open country, dotted with clumps of trees, and intersected by numberless little canals, for the purpose of irrigation, the main ones dividing the land into regular fields, the soil in which was as usual a light sandy loam. It had been loosened and pulverised to the depth of a few inches by the rude plough and harrow of the Scindians, and reminded me of fallow land at home. But this cheering prospect only stretched inland for about a quarter of a mile; beyond was seen, as far as the eye could reach, a vast jungle, studded with conical sandhills or clumps of prickly pear. There was a village at this place, and a neat little minaretted masjeed chunamed over, which at a distance made it appear as if built of white marble. A few of the inhabitants were assembled in it for evening prayer; but the major part of them were clustered around a haji lately arrived, who was earnestly holding forth on some subject which appeared to interest them deeply.

On returning to my boat I found the dandies and their

moonghee busily employed in preparing their evening meal. It was sufficiently simple, consisting only of coarse otta cakes and water; as the latter was thick with sand, they always strained it through a cloth before using it. These and rice were their only food; and yet those boatmen of the Indus were fine athletic fellows, and much more robust than the natives farther east. The only luxury they indulged in was smoking the hookah, or as it is vulgarly called hubble bubble; and at night they would seat themselves in a ring on the deck of the boat, or on the bank, and occupy themselves in this way for a considerable time. Joggery is the term for the compound of the tobacco leaf, sugar, and spices, which is smoked; the worst description is used by the dandies, but the sort made for the wealthier natives and Europeans is very expensive from its costly ingredients, which yield a delicious and luxurious fragrance said to be beneficial to the lungs.

On the next day about noon, the wind blew very strong across the stream, and drove the fleet now much scattered to leeward; several of the jumpties grounding on the banks, where they remained fast till a late hour on the ensuing morning, their occupants being without food in the interim. Luckily for us, we kept close to the cooking jumptie, a subject of congratulation when we brought to for the night nigh a thick jungle, which a native cautioned us not to enter, as tigers were prowling about the vicinity, and had already done considerable harm. This information did not, however, deter us from landing to bury a woman there who had died during the day; the grave certainly was a shallow one, for it was made in a hurry, and she was consigned to it in silence.

> "Alone and in unhallow'd ground she rests,
> Yet shall she wake with those in holy earth."

As is usual, the married people had accompanied the

baggage; at this period whole families of them had become sick; and in the evenings it was a painful sight to see the father, himself ill of fever, endeavouring to attend to the wants of a helpless wife and family of, in some instances, half-a-dozen children. One family in particular had been deserted by their servants, and their situation was most deplorable, having no one even to cook for them.

The two following days continued stormy, and the passage of the narrow parts of the river were dangerous in consequence. At every bend in the stream, it was necessary to carry a tow-line to the bank, against which the jumptie would otherwise be dashed by the current, which at these places became uncommonly strong and turbulent; and the exertions which the dandies made at times to effect this object were really astonishing. Plunging fearlessly into the roughest part of the water, which often seethed and hissed like a boiling cauldron, they would swim to land dog-fashion, and clamber up precipitous banks of crumbling sand twenty or thirty feet in height with the agility of monkeys.

26th Sept.—About noon we arrived at Kotree, and the right wing of our corps, which had followed us in steamboats, joined in a few hours afterwards, having been only three days descending. Here we found two sepoy regiments encamped, preparatory to an expedition against the Baloochees, whom the governor of Scinde, with the concurrence of Nusseer Khan, the sovereign of Khelat, had determined to chastise for their many forays into the British territories during the warm season, and for the rough manner in which they had handled detachments of native troops at various periods.

We had now a great many incapable of duty, the

number on the sick-list amounting to nearly one-half of our entire strength. One poor fellow who was very weak, fell from a steamer into the river, and was drowned; a native jumped in after him and grasped his clothes, which unfortunately gave way, and nothing more was seen of him.

The next morning we started for Tattah, and the river now flowing in a tolerably direct course, and being therefore much smoother than above Kotree, we drifted pleasantly along, passing during the day what had been a shikargah, or hunting-ground of the Ameers, who desolated large tracts for this purpose. Their manner of hunting is said to have been extremely cruel by those who have witnessed their amusements. The shikargahs were fenced round with hedges or walls, and supplied with water from the river; which was stopped when the Ameers wished to have a hunt, until the wild animals became excessively thirsty; the dam was then broken down, and as the beasts rushed to their usual drinking place, they were slaughtered by the hunters, who had got into safe positions near the spot. This was certainly a mode of relaxation quite worthy of the ignorant oligarchs of Scinde, who actually believed that a regiment of European soldiers could be quartered in an ordinary sized box, and therefore viewed all articles of this description with the greatest distrust. One would imagine that laurels could not be gathered from conquering men of this stamp.

In the evening we stopped at a short distance from Tattah, and next morning, as we pushed away from the bank, the child of a native woman, wife of one of the camp followers, fell into the river. The mother, without making the slightest uproar, ran to the forepart of the jumptie, and watching till her child rose to the surface,

plunged boldly in, grasped the little fellow, and handing him to a dandie, swam to the bank. In a few minutes afterwards I saw her in her own jumptie again, fondling her boy (who was thoroughly frightened with the sousing he had got,) in order to pacify him; he continued to roar lustily, however, till we were out of hearing.

Two hours brought us to the place where we were to disembark; and as soon as the jumpties were secured, the dandies commenced making ropes of the long fibrous sedge which grew here in great abundance, to tow them back to Sukkur. Their method of rope-making was simple; the sedge being first softened by pounding, and then twisted with short sticks. The ropes made in this way were strong and durable.

In the evening camels and doolies arrived from Tattah, six miles distant, for the conveyance of the sick, and at a late hour we prepared for our journey thither. I had been again ill for the two preceding days, and the doctor directed me to get into a kejou, thinking I should not be able to march with the convalescents. Each camel carried two of these kejous or panniers, suspended at either side of his hump, the connecting cords resting on a rude wooden frame; and a more villanous mode of travelling, I can aver from sad experience, was never practised since the hour an animal was first bestridden. My comrade for the time was a young man lame with rheumatism; and directing a sirwan to make one of his camels kneel down, I helped him into his kejou, and then getting into my own, held fast behind and before as the animal stood up, when I found myself at the height of some seven or eight feet from the ground. Crippled up as I was, and without a seat, save the uneven wicker work of the kejou, I felt sufficiently uncomforta-

ble while the camel remained stationary; but when it commenced its high, tiresome walk I found it so in the extreme. As we quitted the bank all was noise and confusion; the creaking of the wooden axles of the hackeries, and the bellowings of camels and bullocks, mingling in wild discordance with the Babellian voices of bipeds. The strangeness of the scene drew my attention for a few moments from the discomforts of my situation; but my mind was soon forcibly recalled from its wanderings by the floundering of our camel in a slough we had to cross, and into which we were every moment in danger of tumbling. However, after divers stumbles we got safely over, being much more fortunate in this respect than others, whose camels fell in the act of crossing, and precipitated them into the mud.

Our way now lay along a narrow road, which ran parallel with a nulla, the jungle on either side swarming with the musquito and camel fly, which so teased our camel that it was constantly kicking or rubbing against the bushes to get rid of its tormentors. It was rather unpleasant every now and then to be coming into contact with a prickly pear bush, but still there was no remedy; until at last I took my companion's stick, and getting on my knees, inflicted a blow on the neck of the camel whenever it quitted the centre of the road, in such a manner as compelled it to side off in an opposite direction; and in case of a kick, punishment was given about the tail. In this way we got on tolerably for some time, until the road became sandy and wider, and free from the ruts which had hitherto crossed it, when our progress was much easier, the camel being now quite at home. But our annoyances were not all over yet: a drunken fellow in the kejou on the camel in front, to whose tail

the halter of ours was tied, continued to give me much annoyance, as well as his companion, who, getting tired of his conveyance, solicited my permission to get out and walk. This I could not give, as the man who was drunk must have inevitably fallen, if he had not remained to balance him, and although the youngster wearied me with entreaties, and even cried with pain and impatience, the only concession I made was a promise, that if he got any one else to supply his place I would permit him to walk. At last he did get one of the convalescents, who had become fatigued and dropped behind, to mount; but the latter had not travelled a mile before he wanted to be set down; in the kejou, however, he had to stay. As a panacea for these several evils, the night was delightfully cool, the stars twinkled brightly in a sky of the most intense blue, and a breeze fresh from the sea played with a grateful and refreshing influence on my feverish brow.

It was ten o'clock when we reached the camp-ground, and I was now tempted to confine the drunken soldier who had given me so much annoyance, but on consideration, as he was an hospital patient, and his crime therefore of a character so aggravated as to subject him to trial by court-martial, I let him off, and went in search of a tent. I soon found an empty one, but the camels had not yet come with the bedding, and after the lapse of an hour, when they did reach the camp, I was a long time before I could get my guttery, and then I was scarcely able to carry it to the tent, which, on reaching again, I found was occupied by seven or eight men, who had taken up all the good berths, and so I was fain to make my bed on an uneven spot in the dark, and stretch my crippled limbs as I best might. Wearied as I was, I could not

sleep, for the drunken man already alluded to, had got by some ill-fortune beside me on one hand, while a dying man lay on the other, whose groans of agony were horribly contrasted with the blasphemous language of the old debauché.

We did not march on the following day; so in the evening I stole away to have a peep at the town, and to make a drawing of a mosque at a short distance from the camp. Tattah is supposed to be the Pattala of Strabo, where the productions of India were collected, and thence carried up the Indus as far as it was navigable, when they were conveyed by caravans to the Oxus, by which, and the Ochus, they reached the Caspian sea, and so were finally transported into Europe. In the fifth and sixth centuries, Tattah must have continued to be a place of some importance from its favourable position, as Gibbon informs us that one of the routes chosen by the silk caravans, in order to avoid the rapacity of the Persian monarchs, was the Indus, from the estuary of which they easily reached the ports of Guzerat, where they awaited the arrival of the annual fleet of the west. At a very late period, Tattah was one of the greatest of Oriental emporia. Enjoying a free trade as far as Lahore, it was the grand medium by which the products of Western India and Affghanistan were exchanged for those of Malabar and Coromandel, and for European goods. Its principal prosperity was, however, produced by its own manufactures of cotton cloth, which in the time of Nadir Shah, are said to have employed upwards of 35,000 weavers. It was famed for the skill of its workmen in mosaic; but the despotic conduct of the Talpoori dynasty caused these craftsmen to emigrate to Bombay, where the *boudoir* of many a fair is ornamented by articles of their

curious and minute workmanship. The lunsghis and pottery of Tattah were likewise much esteemed, and the latter, even still, is in some request. While Scinde was under the sway of the Mogul emperors, Tattah continued to be a flourishing city. When their dynasty was overthrown, an opportunity was afforded to a barbarous and warlike tribe, called Talpoori, inhabiting a part of Baloochistan, to seize upon Scinde. Ahmed Shah, at one time, undertook to drive them out, but finding this to be of difficult accomplishment, he agreed to accept a tribute, which was ill paid, and usually only on an Affghan army appearing on the frontier. The rapacity of the Talpoori chiefs was without bounds; they broke up the old tenures of the Zemindhars, depriving them of all permanent interest in the soil. Nor did they afford protection to commerce. The European nations therefore withdrew the important factories they had at Tattah, which then fell rapidly to decay, its ruin being further hastened by the removal of the seat of government to Hyderabad.

30th.—At an early hour we were awakened by the band playing the "general" or signal for marching. The tents were now struck, and we rolled up our gutteries, tying our tin pots securely to their fastenings. It behoved us to take great care of these, comprising, as they did, our breakfast, dinner, and tea equipage, and moreover, serving also as our washing-basins. Mine was an old black dingy concern, destitute of handle, with a piece of rag drawn through where its lowest rivet had been, to prevent the insipid beverage doled out to us night and morning making its exit without licence.

The road this morning was beautifully smooth and level, and as I took care to place my guttery underneath me in the kejou, I felt tolerably comfortable. About a

mile and a half from Tattah we came to a slight stony elevation, covered with a vast number of tombs, many of which looked extremely pretty, the domes being supported by marble pillars elaborately sculptured. After a march of five miles we reached the camp-ground—that distance being sufficiently far for the weakly state of the men—and here we found only a single well of mawkish and unpalatable water.

Next morning, being heartily tired of the Kejou, I procured a camel with a saddle ;—but lest the word saddle might induce a reader to imagine an article to which the term is applied in this country, it may be necessary to explain that the one in question was a rough wooden frame made so as to prevent the rider from falling backwards or forwards, to which stirrups were attached, and constructed so as to accommodate two persons. With the aid of my guttery, however, I managed to make a tolerably easy seat, and striding it, up got the camel after a few preliminary grunts, and off I started. It was now only a little after midnight. We marched thus early, because we had twelve miles to travel before we could reach the next camp-ground, and marches in India must always be performed in the night or in the cool of the morning before sunrise. Nevertheless, so slow did the column move, that it was eight o'clock before we got there, and then we had to wait for a considerable time before our tents were pitched, sheltering ourselves, as we best might, at the shady side of clumps of prickly pear. When I got into a tent, my head ached from the heat of the sun, and I thought the fever, which I hoped had left me, was again about to return ; but after bathing my temples with water, I gradually became cooler, my pulse at the same time getting slower and more regular.

The mutineers of the 64th sepoys who had been sentenced to transportation to an island on the coast, had been given in charge to our head-quarters wing on leaving Sukkur, and during the night nine of them out of thirty-one managed to make their escape from our main guard. By means of a ladle they took the rivets out of their irons, which were only upon one leg, the other having been left at liberty to allow of their walking; at a preconcerted signal the nine jumped up simultaneously; and although there were four sentries around them all escaped without sustaining the slightest injury. The sentries were completely paralyzed with surprise and terror, and had not even presence of mind to alarm the guard, which was done by the sentinel over the arms. This occurrence detained us for another day at Ghoogha, for so was the camp ground called, to permit of police being sent out to capture the runaways, who were promised fifty rupees for each man they should bring in; but the convicts got clear off and were never taken. The matter was besides closely investigated by the colonel, who thought fit to place the officer of the day under arrest, as well as the sergeants of the guard; but although great bungling was apparent also on the part of the adjutant, an over-bearing and self-sufficient man, to whom it was entirely owing that the sentries were not loaded, nor proper orders issued for the guidance of the guard relative to the prisoners, he escaped uncensured as far as I could learn. This was looked upon as a most disgraceful affair, and so indeed it was; and much conjecture was afloat as to how Sir Charles Napier might act or talk with regard to it.

Feeling tolerably strong, and being heartily tired of the hospital, and the ignorant and impudent hospital appren-

tices, I now requested the doctor to discharge me, which he did, and I accordingly resumed my duties in the orderly-room. The tent set apart for this, I found to be a miserable palkee, which afforded but a poor protection from the sun, and in it I was obliged to write each day after the march was over for five or six hours. It was the adjutant's duty to have provided a proper tent for us, as he received government allowances for that purpose, but he was too parsimonious to put himself to that expense, and not content with compelling us to work there, he quartered his dhobie in it likewise, whose fire rendered our position tenfold worse. This, one must allow, was sufficiently trying to a man wasted away with a month's attacks of intermittent fever. Writing of itself is severe labour in India, putting marching aside, which is not very pleasant, when a man, as is frequently the case, and was so with us, sinks in sand to the ancle every step he takes. Without allusion to myself (for I marched but little, although that little from sickness pressed severely upon me), let a soldier's life be reviewed for a single day, while on the line of march, and one will then become aware how harassing his duties are. Awaked from sleep about midnight by the "general," he immediately packs up his bed, and then striking his tent, folds up the pieces and places them upon the camels; no trifling labour, and occupying in ordinary cases half an hour. He next accoutres himself, and when the "assembly" sounds, falls in with his company, unless he is for the baggage guard, a most troublesome and onerous duty. On reaching the camp ground, having walked usually from fifteen to twenty miles, after the column is dismissed, the soldier has to pitch his tent, a matter of serious difficulty when many of his comrades are on duty; he has then to go to look for his bed, and if

he is lucky enough to find it, makes it on the ground; when he may rest himself till he gets breakfast, his next business being to prepare himself for parade.

7th October.—We encamped within six miles of Kurratchee, and as there were no wells, fatigue parties had to be told off to dig for water, which was found at the depth of a few feet. Here I was again attacked with fever, the fit remaining on me for several hours, but as evening came on I got rid of it, and went to see a sick friend, who had been a long time in hospital. In the corner of his tent a group of some three or four had assembled around a clay lamp, one of them reading aloud from "Charles O'Malley" an account of some of Mickey Free's exploits, which caused peals of laughter; while a few feet apart from them, a poor wretch was writhing in the bitter pangs of dissolution.

Our last march to Kurratchee was over a heavy, sandy road, or rather beaten track (for there was then neither road nor bridge in Scinde), and as day dawned we reached the hills which overlook it, and the broad sea met my view. How my heart bounded at the sight! for often had I doubted whether I should ever see it again, and I longed for the time when the bark which was to bear me from the hateful shores of the charnel-house of India, would be cleaving its blue waters. I had diverged from the column in order to make a short cut, and as it now crossed the hill far to the right, it presented a singular spectacle, with its long line of bullocks, camels, and hackeries in the rear.

At Kurratchee we joined the left wing, which, as already stated, had preceded us, having marched from Kotree. It had suffered severely for want of carriage and medicine for the sick; the want of water was likewise much felt; and one man had actually died from thirst. The marches, too, were very long, and owing

to the weakly state of the men, half of them would frequently drop behind, the greater part of these not coming into camp for several hours after the column. At Kotree they had passed two nights in the open air; the wing of the 78th, already there, not being prepared to give them their tents.

Shortly after we had got our tents pitched, the sergeants of the 86th regiment, then lying at Kurratchee, invited those of our corps to a dinner. I went there among the rest, and felt much pleased by the kindly feeling and hospitality evinced by those comrades. Prior to our quitting Scinde, we gave them a similar invitation, the officers of our regiment lending their mess-tent for the occasion. Indeed, during the whole time of our stay at this station, nothing could exceed the good understanding which existed between both corps.

Next day I was obliged to go into hospital again, much as I disliked doing so, being severely attacked with fever. I had never been so ill before, and was only able to crawl about on my hands and knees for nearly a week; when I began to regain a little strength, but suffered much inconvenience from deafness (produced, I have been induced to believe, by the large quantities of quinine I had taken), occasional tendency to serous apoplexy, and a voiding of mucilage. All who had suffered severely from fever were similarly affected; spleen had not, however, as yet appeared amongst us.

Our hospital establishment at this time consisted of a steward, apothecary, two assistant apothecaries, and three apothecary apprentices, with about seventy native followers. The European portion of the department were as worthless a set as ever existed; their ignorance was only equalled by their insolence; and so negligent were

they of their duties, that natives were permitted to compound medicine, and even to administer them to the patients. One of them, an assistant apothecary, who received a salary of about eighty rupees per mensem, was only a boy, and knew so little about his business, that he could not even bleed properly; and I have seen him, when an assistant-surgeon was visiting the patients, and ordering them their diets and medicine, pretending to be marking down his directions, while at the same time the pen he held was without ink. Thus it was impossible for the men to be treated properly; and the worst of the matter was, when his conduct was reported at various times, it was never investigated.

Among the hospital patients at this period, was one poor fellow who had become deranged from exposure to the sun while at Sukkur. Previous to this distressing occurrence, he was noted for his quiet and inoffensive manner and taciturn disposition; but insanity seemed to have imparted wit to him; and he would frequently indulge in the most cutting and ironical language, displaying a fund of information of an odd character amid his madness, which no one could have imagined him possessed of. I was frequently much amused by his smart sayings. He seemed to be conscious that his position exempted him from danger of punishment, and therefore made the officers at times the subjects of bitter remark, rendered doubly so by its truth and point. On one occasion a brevet-major was captain of the day, who was very fond of having it all his own way in the corps, and endeavoured to gather as much influence around himself as possible. When going his rounds, this officer visited the hospital, and chanced to meet the madman, who after a salute said: "Well, major, how are you get-

ting on?" "Very well, George," was the reply. "Don't be in a hurry, major," again said the maniac; "I want to tell you something." "What is it?" inquired the officer. "I'll tell you that," answered the other; "you are a fine man, major, aye, and a clever man into the bargain. Yet take my advice. Don't meddle so much as you do in other people's business, or you will find yourself in a fix some fine day."

The major was thunderstruck; his face darkened with rage, and he stood still for a moment as if undecided how to act, and then walked rapidly away, while George uttered a loud scoffing laugh, to the infinite delight of the listeners. A few evenings afterwards, the madman wandered from the hospital, and by some means got into the officers' mess-tent as they were at dinner. The major was one of the first who saw him enter, and probably thinking he was about to undergo another castigation, exclaimed, with the greatest trepidation, "Turn him out, turn him out!" George was immediately brought back to his tent, which was close to mine, and presently said, in a sulky tone, "Aye, he thought it was squabbling with old P——n he was in the Jugdulluk."

Another man became delirious with fever, and stole away from the hospital at night, avoiding the sentries with that cunning peculiar to persons in his situation. He continued absent for four days, although a strict search was made for him, when he was brought back by a shepherd, who had found him lying under a bush twelve miles from the camp. He was in a state of utter exhaustion; being taken great care of, however, he finally recovered.

While in hospital I saw, for the first time, the mirage of the desert; and so strong was the delusion, that,

although the sea was four miles away, I fancied it had overflown the plain to within a distance of half a mile. I frequently saw this phenomenon afterwards during my stay at Kurratchee.

CHAPTER XVI.

VOLUNTEERING OPENS.—CONTINUES TO BE ATTACKED WITH FEVER.—WANT OF TENTS.—SEVERE DUTY.—ADDRESS FROM THE 35TH N. I.—THEATRE AT KURRATCHEE.—GOVERNOR'S DEPARTURE.—VISITS THE TOWN.—IMPROVEMENTS IN THE STATION.

On being discharged from the hospital, I found a general order had been received, which gave permission to such as did not wish to accompany the regiment home, to volunteer into other corps in India. As is usual, on such occasions, all restrictions with regard to the sale of liquor were now laid aside, and the men were allowed to purchase as much of it as they pleased. Much drunkenness was the result, yet, on the whole, there was less commission of crime than I had expected. Volunteering continued during our stay at Kurratchee, 446 men quitting the regiment, most of whom joined corps serving in Bengal; troops being better treated in that presidency than in any of the others; a fact of which the 13th were perfectly cognizant. Many of these subsequently expressed much sorrow for having left us; some even committed suicide; on the other hand, others were equally sorry at not having volunteered. But very few men went to the 86th regiment, although it was a most excellent corps for a good man; the great dislike to it on their part, I understood, being the men being obliged to purchase their necessaries

from the quarter-master, instead of being permitted to buy them where they pleased. I only make this assertion from hearsay; however, if such is really the case, they are better off than the company's Europeans, who have even still, I believe, in some instances, to pay for their coffins out of their first month's allowance on landing in the country. *Query*, was this order made from the consideration that the soldier must meet the ghastly king of terrors with a bolder front, because he felt assured his heir would not have to pay for his coffin?

The bounty usually given to volunteers in India, averages from thirty to forty rupees. As soldiers of bad character are not now permitted to extend their services there, the system must be highly beneficial to government, considering the great expense of sending troops out. Most of our fellows drank their bounties on receipt, and as a matter of course, the men of the 86th came in for a full share of liquor; but their colonel not feeling quite pleased at what he said was errant sponging on their part, heavy pack drills, occasionally by moonlight, were generally the result of these libations to his jolly godship. This, however, was only a momentary hiatus in the usually excellent conduct of the 86th, and taken *en masse*, they were a fine orderly set of fellows, and much to the credit of their colonel, flogging was almost unknown among them.

We had now a great deal to do in the orderly-room, closing the service sheets of the volunteers, &c., and shattered as my system was, feeling an interest in forwarding the work, I wrote nearly all day long; and although I had slight attacks of fever frequently, I would not go into the hospital, considering it useless; but merely went to my tent, and lying down until the fit left me, then re-

turned to the office. As a matter of course, I daily grew weaker, and experienced almost a total loss of appetite, while my skin became of a green sickly colour. Numbers, like myself, continued ailing, notwithstanding the reputed salubrious climate of the station; and this was partly owing to the atmosphere even there being slightly tainted with malaria from its proximity to the Indus, and partly to our uncomfortable situation from the want of sufficient tents. Owing to the great number of our sick, on arrival at Kurratchee, several of the company's tents had to be pitched in the hospital lines, and as the men continued going in and out of the hospital, but few of these could be returned. The consequence was that the company's tents would frequently be so crowded that at last their walls had to be put outside the outer fly, a considerable space being thus left for the cold night air and heavy dews to come through, and one was no sooner well than he was ill again. These circumstances were explained to the commissariat officer on more tents being indented for; he, nevertheless, refused to give them, stating a sufficient number had been already issued to us. Why this matter was not brought to the notice of Sir Charles Napier, I cannot say. I feel confident, had such been done, we would not have wanted tents very long.

Incapable as the men were of enduring fatigue at this time, the duty was severe, many mounting guard with only one night in bed, although the general had made an arrangement, in positive terms, which would have given them several nights. Eight men, as nearly as I can recollect, more than the number he ordered, mounted one guard alone; and these, as the field-officer of the day came round, were obliged to remain in the guard-tent concealed, lest the general might ascertain from his report that his order

had been disobeyed. This was all the adjutant's doing, who by some means had obtained an undue influence over his superiors, which he did not always use for the most legitimate purposes. He frequently abused the non-commissioned officers in presence of the privates, and in a manner totally unwarranted by Her Majesty's Regulations, which distinctly and strongly prohibit such conduct with respect to them; as any one must be aware, who reads the instructions relative to the internal economy of a regiment. With regard to the privates* he was more chary, as he knew many of them would report him, so much was he disliked.

On the 19th of October we received a congratulatory address on our speedy prospect of returning home from the 35th Bengal sepoys. This corps had fought side by side with the 13th during its arduous services in Affghanistan, and nothing could exceed the kindly feeling subsisting between them. While with the army of Exercise at Ferozepore in December 1842, the 13th presented them with an ottar dhan, and gave them a dinner, a compliment which was returned by the 35th. The translation of the address ran as follows:

"After many many salutations from the Subadhars, Jemadhars, office-holders, and the whole of the sepoys of the 35th regiment, Noka Ka Pulton, know that we are well, and may God preserve you.

"We have heard that your regiment is about to return to England, and it gives us very great pleasure, and pray that God will conduct you in safety to your native land, and grant you a happy meeting with your friends. Be assured as long as we live our friendship will last.

* For the regulations on this head regarding them, *vide* "Red Book, General Officer's Confidential Report," page 406, par. 8.

"Written by Mana Sing, Subadhar Major Bahadure, 35th, or Noka Ka Pulton, at Agra, 28th September, 1844."

Shortly after the receipt of this a play was got up by the sergeants of the 86th; a rude theatre having been already constructed of cane at the sides and ends, with a canvas roof supported by bamboos. A mound of earth had been raised so as to form an inclined plane towards the stage, and this was the gallery, the space between its termination and the stage being termed the pit. On going to the theatre I found it crowded with as motley an audience as perhaps ever witnessed the performance of those of the sock and buskin. The front seats in the pit were occupied by the aristocracy, comprising the officers of the garrison, or at least a goodly portion of them; and next to them were samples of the middle class, in the shape of clerks of the military and civil departments, sergeants of the European corps, and fat, jolly-looking Parsees, with a slight sprinkling of wealthy aboriginals, half-castes and Indo-Portuguese. In the gallery were the privates of the European corps and their wives, who were in many instances natives and half-castes: some of the latter, though dark, and scarcely one remove from the hue of the aboriginal, had strikingly handsome features, and teeth of a pearly whiteness. With regard to the congregated gods,—England, Scotland, and the four provinces of Ireland had furnished their quotas; and cockney slang, broad Scotch, and the cant of the low Dublin blackguard might be heard at intervals, while the deep brogue of the unsophisticated Connaught-man sounded amid the clang of tongues like the bass of an organ out of tune.

The acting was very tolerable; but the best part of the fun was a song written to the air of the well-known

vulgar lyric, "Billy Barlow," by the sergeant who sang it, which altogether turned upon local matters, such as Sir Charles Napier's mode of governing, and his patriarchal beard. The audience laughed loud and long at the expense of their veteran general, and the song was most uproariously encored.

In the earlier part of November, a general court-martial assembled to try the sentries who had been placed over the sepoys who had escaped, together with the sergeants of the guard. As to the officer then placed under arrest, he had been released. They were all acquitted; and Sir Charles Napier, when confirming the sentence, which he did not altogether approve of, passed severe strictures on the regimental authorities for not having the sentries loaded, and for allowing camels to be near the guard, a circumstance which had facilitated the convicts' escape.

Towards the middle of the month, the Dewallee or lamp festival of the natives was celebrated, when several small temples were constructed and brilliantly lighted, and shots discharged and squibs let off in every direction near the sepoy lines and the bazaars. Hindoostanees are very much attached to displays of this character; and even after they become converts to Christianity, I was told would illuminate the road to church on high days at evening prayer time.

As December approached we heard of the war in the Sawunt Warree country, and with this information came rumours that we were to be detained at Bombay, on going there, for twelve months to garrison it, the European troops having all gone on active service. This was an unpleasant prospect for us, who had set our hearts on home; but we trusted that these rumours were groundless, and hoped for the best.

About this time the governor quitted Kurratchee, to head the expedition against the Baloochees, and took the major part of our volunteers with him. The latter were wretchedly accommodated with carriage, the women and children being obliged to get upon the camels, to the imminent hazard of breaking their necks. The governor on reaching the first camp-ground, and learning how matters stood, rated the members of his miserably organized commissariat soundly, and angrily demanded how they were to provide conveyance for an army when carriage and followers (which they likewise were destitute of) could not not be procured by them for little more than 300 men. Even with respect to his own accommodations, the governor had good reason to be displeased; and so ill, it was said, was his larder supplied, that he had to ride back to Kurratchee for his breakfast.

As it was now generally understood we should shortly proceed to Bombay, I resolved on seeing the town of Kurratchee before my departure, and accordingly went there one day in company with a comrade. After climbing over the ruinous wall which surrounds it, we rambled through the narrow and dirty streets until we were pounced upon by the native police, and taken before their jemadhar, who informed us, in broken English, that the Governor had ordered that no soldiers should enter the town without passes, and demanded ours. We had none to produce, and were therefore conducted to the superintendant of police, who lived in the suburbs, followed by a crowd of idlers curious to see the end of the matter. This person, who spoke English tolerably well, informed me that soldiers were obliged to have passes, in consequence of some men of the 78th Highlanders, in a drunken quarrel, killing one of the townspeople a few months

before; and that his orders were to send all such found without them inside the walls as prisoners to their lines. However, when we had stated our ignorance as to the regulation, and duly complimented him on the fluency with which he spoke English, he graciously permitted us to depart.

A great many improvements had been made about the cantonments and station since I had previously been at Kurratchee. A bunder, stretching out a considerable distance into the harbour, was nearly completed, so that boats or dinghis could load or unload at low tide; the plain had been cleared of the clumps of prickly pear; and an army of 20,000 men could now manœuvre on it with ease. A road had likewise been marked out to the cantonments, and at either side several bungalows were built, or in the course of erection, in a very substantial manner, and verandahs had been added to the barracks. The population too had increased; and the town and bazaars, at a rough estimation, might now contain about 30,000 inhabitants.

Forming a connecting link between Bombay and the Persian Gulf, and from its propinquity to the Indus, and the transit to Tattah capable of being rendered very easy by the construction of a good road, Kurratchee, under the fostering care of our government, must ere long become the grand emporium of Scinde, and perhaps is fated to rival the ancient Pattala itself. Its retention, and that of Tattah, ought to answer our every purpose in a commercial and even military point of view; and by restoring Hyderabad and Upper Scinde to the Ameers, little more would be done than an act of justice; an act at the same time which would rid us of a country which at present requires the presence of a strong force, and the revenue

of which is little more than sufficient to pay the civil servants. Upper Scinde has been the grave of many a brave man, and why should the voice of humanity be disregarded when no sound plea of policy or profit can be advanced in extenuation of a reckless sacrifice of life? Viewing the question in any light, it is now a useless and costly appendage to British India.

However unwise or impolitic the Talpoori sovereigns may have shewn themselves while rulers of Scinde, it is a matter of grave doubt whether the conduct of the Indian government towards them admits of exculpation. In 1832, a treaty was entered into with them, which had for its object the free navigation of the Indus, from which great commercial results were then expected; and on this our relations with them were based, until 1838; when they underwent a total alteration, in consequence of the proposed restoration of Shah Soojah to the sovereignty of Affghanistan. On the ground of Scinde being a part of the Affghan dominions, the Ameers were called upon to contribute their quota for the effecting of that object, and to cede Bukkur for a time to the British. They had paid no tribute since the death of Timour Shah; and as it was correctly supposed they would not admit the right of payment, so long discontinued, it was arranged the claim should be supported by the Bombay division of the army of the Indus, and that no communication should be entered into with them until it had effected its landing in their territories, lest they might throw obstacles in its way, or oppose it openly. Thus were the Ameers pounced upon: no attempt being made on their part to oppose the landing of our troops, whose operations they might have seriously embarrassed; nor afterwards to impede their progress to Hyderabad. Coerced in this covert, one might

say dishonourable manner, the unlucky sovereigns of Scinde had to comply with our demands, both as regarded the arrears of tribute, of which then only a part was paid, and the temporary ceding of Bukkur, which has never since been restored; and when all our connexions with Affghanistan had ceased, and even the semblance of any claim on Scinde therefore done away with, to such an extent had our crafty policy compromised the Ameers in their relations with us, that they were hurled from their position as rulers—to be the object of threatening letters on the part of their irascible conqueror!

CHAPTER XVII.

ORDERED TO BOMBAY.—EMBARKS.—CONDITION IN THE STEAMER.—RECOVERS FROM THE FEVER.—DESCRIPTION OF BOMBAY, &C.—NATIVES.—DRESS OF THE WOMEN.—ESPLANADE.—CLIMATE.—HINDOO PATIENCE.—PARSEES.

On the 2nd of December we received orders to prepare for our immediate departure to Bombay, the steamers having arrived to convey us thither. Few can imagine my joyous feelings as I ascended a hill fronting our camp in the evening, whence the vessels could be seen at anchor in the distance. Twelve long weary months of sickness and privation had I passed in Scinde, cut off, as it were from the world, with death constantly staring me in the face; but the happy prospect of a speedy release had at length burst upon my view. I should no more feel its burning blasts; and the strength its noxious climate had robbed me of, I trusted change of air would restore.

Early on the 4th we marched out of camp; nevertheless, it was evening when we had all embarked in the *Sesostris* and *Pluto* war steamers, and from exposure to the sun, I was again severely attacked with fever. On board the *Sesostris*, in which I was, there were upwards of 600 people; all of whom, with the exception of about

fifty sick, were crowded together on the upper deck in the open air, on which was also a large quantity of baggage; so that we had scarcely room to stand, and lying in a majority of cases was altogether out of the question. What rendered our situation still more uncomfortable was a rough sea, the waves breaking over the vessel and wetting us to the skin, while at the same time we could not get at our boxes to procure a change of clothes. Along with these annoyances, there was only a single cooking copper for such a number of persons; a small quantity of tea was all that could be got ready for us; I esteemed myself fortunate if I could procure a noggin of this once a day, and that at the imminent risk of being scalded; and this, with a little rice biscuit, which it was impossible almost for a sick man to use, was our only diet during the five days we were on board the steamer. I have seen more than one hospital patient snatch the broken meat, which a khitmagar was giving an officer's dog, and eagerly devour it. And to this humiliating condition were British soldiers reduced in time of peace, and in the midst of plenty, from the ill accommodations afforded them by the penurious *imperium in imperio* of Bombay! How long did those days of exquisitely acute misery appear to me, sick, cold, without proper nourishment, crippled for want of room, and wallowing in loathsome filth! I frequently thought as I burned with fever that my last hour had come.

At a late hour on the night of the 7th we came into harbour, and about noon next day, which was Sunday, I obtained liberty to go on shore, as the regiment was not to disembark till evening. After getting ashore, I crawled to the empty barracks, where we were to be quartered,

and lay down upon a cot to rest myself, when the fever fit again came on. A chuckarow now chanced to appear, whom I sent for some lime-juice, sugar, and water; and mixing and taking a strong dose of these, I experienced much relief. During the ensuing fortnight, I had frequent attacks of fever; but from the abundant use I made of this acid (which at length cleared away the malaria bile altogether), they became lighter and lighter daily, until I was completely freed. I may say with truth, that I derived more benefit from the use of lime-juice, than from all the medicine I had previously taken; after the first week it would cool and rid me of the fever almost instantaneously; and to it I am confident I owe my never afterwards having the spleen, nor any of the other diseases following the malaria; with which numbers (many of whom had not suffered near as much as myself) were afflicted.

Occupying a little room in company with another sergeant, I now felt very comfortable; being soon also completely restored to health, I began to look somewhat curiously around me; and as I had seen but little of Bombay during my former *séjour* in its harbour, I now determined to learn all about it that I could.

Bombay is situated on an island about twenty miles in circumference, and which was ceded to the British in 1662, as part of the dowery of the infanta Catherine of Portugal, on her marriage with Charles II. A squadron was sent out by him, to receive investiture of the island, but for a considerable time the viceroy refused to comply with his master's instructions, terrified at the idea of yielding it up to heretics; until at length, after much threatening and persuading, he consented, on the in-

habitants being guaranteed the free exercise of their religion. Charles not finding the acquisition of Bombay as profitable as he expected, although it was then a place of considerable trade, gave it to the East India Company in 1688, and in 1700 it became the head of the presidency of Western India, the seat of government being transferred thither from Surat. Under the Portuguese, the population of the island was about 10,000, in 1740 it had increased to 70,000, and in 1763, to 150,000. At present the number of inhabitants is estimated at 230,000, which is probably much short of the actual population, and comprises Europeans, native Christians, Hindoos, Mahometans, Parsees, with a few Armenians and Jews, of these the Hindoos are the most numerous, forming about three-fourths of the whole.

The city of Bombay consists of two distinct towns, one within the limits of Fort George, which is separated from the other, called Dungeree, by a fine plain about a mile in breadth termed the esplanade. The streets within the fort are mostly very narrow, and in rainy weather so excessively dirty as to be almost impassable to pedestrians. They bear scarcely any resemblance to those in European towns, the houses being generally destitute of windows, and having a heavy, sombre appearance, from the manner in which their fronts are ornamented with carved woodwork. As in all eastern towns the shops of the buneahs are raised a few feet from the ground, and have their entire front open, in the corners of these sit the shopmen crosslegged on carpets, when not employed in attending customers. The generality of these speak English sufficiently well to enable them to transact business with the troops. The principal buildings are the town-

hall, which contains an excellent library and small museum, the mint, and the cathedral. The appearance of the latter outside is no way imposing; but its interior is even elegant, and ornamented by a number of monuments commemorative of the dead, many of them by the first sculptors of the day.

Dungereee is much larger than Fort George, and is chiefly inhabited by Hindoos and Mahometans. It has a very beautiful and spacious mosque, and several Hindoo temples, together with an extensive hospital erected by the munificent Parsee baronet, Sir Jemasur Jejudgebhoy. There are a good number of Goa-Portuguese Catholics in Dungeree, who have a large and substantial place of worship there. Some of these are clerks in the various government offices, and are tolerably intelligent; but by far the greater part of them are an ignorant and besotted race, totally unworthy of having descended from the disciples of Xavier; being mostly employed as cooks to the troops, or in some other low calling peculiar to the *bas peuple* of India. Camp-followers receive much higher wages than in Bengal; but at the same time the necessaries of life are dearer in Bombay than there, as well as almost every thing else.

In personal appearance the natives of both sexes are inferior to those further east; their features are of a coarser character, and do not possess that regularity and beauty of profile which distinguish the Bengalees. With respect to dress, the men of the poorer classes wear only the cotton lunghi, about the loins, and the rich the usual fine calico and muslin frock, with a most unsightly looking turban. The costume of the Mohammedan and Hindoo women consists of a piece of cotton cloth, folded around the body

above the hips, and passed between the legs, a tight spencer with short sleeves, and a cloth thrown over the head, which hangs around them in loose folds. Although careless, and mostly dirty, in matters of dress, the fair of Bombay are passionately fond of ornaments of the precious metals, and nearly all of them wear silver bangles on the ancles and arms, those for the ancles being about the thickness of a man's thumb, and flat on the inside, to permit of their walking more easily. Nevertheless, the wearing of the bangles, together with the cloth between their legs, compels the women to walk wide, like a person on shipboard, and gives them an unpleasing carriage. The belle, in addition to the arm and ancle bangles, wears rings in her nose and ears, and on her toes.

Any one who wishes to see much of the Bombay women, should visit the esplanade at the dawn of day, which then presents a busy and curious scene; the various tanks are crowded around with them, as they are employed in cleansing their brass and copper chatties, or in filling them with water required for household purposes during the day, and drawn up by means of a rope. When their chatties are full they place them on their heads, and return in groups to the city. But many things characteristic of an eastern city may be seen on the esplanade beside women. In one part a number of dhobies are busily employed in washing, not rubbing the clothes between the hands, but striking them against flat stones. Turning from these, a person sees the sepoys performing their evolutions, while at the same time carriages, buggies, and shigreems, are rapidly passing to and fro along the roads. Here equestrians are testing the mettle of their steeds, and there a concourse of pedestrians press on, intent upon their avocations, or leisurely

breathing the cool matin air. But by far the most curious part of the scene is presented by the Parsee devotees, who pace slowly outside the gates, reading their sacred books, or repeating passages from them, in that deep, sonorous tone peculiar to Orientals, apparently heedless of those even of their own people who roll by in their equipages, or of the wealthy Hindoo who has at last been induced to imitate them in this respect.

Bombay is tolerably healthy during the winter months, when the weather is delightfully cool and pleasant, owing to the sea breezes, and Europeans during this season generally enjoy good health; but after the annual rains which set in about midsummer, and terminate on the approach of autumn, sickness is very prevalent. Cholera is scarcely ever absent, and is continually sweeping away numbers of the natives. Europeans too frequently fall victims to it; but the ratio of death among them bears no comparison to those among the aboriginals, owing to the crowded and filthy state of their dwellings. The patience with which they bear the sickness, thus in a measure brought upon them by themselves, is truly astonishing; when attacked with this deadly distemper, and no friends nigh them, I have known them to lie down by the way side, and covering themselves with a cloth, die almost without a groan. Bombay was, at one period, considered the grave-yard of British India; it does not, however, merit that appellation now; nevertheless the Europeans there have all an unhealthy look, and towards children, especially, the climate seems to be particularly unfriendly.

The harbour of Bombay is the finest in India; still its commercial transactions are far inferior to those of the capitals of the other presidencies, and were it not for the

enterprise, industry, and aptitude for trade of the Parsee portion of its inhabitants, who are its principal merchants, they would be of much less importance. This singular people, who are, for their number, at once the wealthiest, the most enlightened, and the most polished of our eastern subjects, merit a chapter by themselves. A slight sketch of their history can hardly fail of being interesting to the reader.

CHAPTER XVIII.

ORIGIN OF FIRE WORSHIP.—ITS INTRODUCTION IN PERSIA BY ZOROASTER.—HISTORY OF THE GUEBRES; THEIR DEFEAT BY THE ARABS.—ARRIVAL IN INDIA, &C. &C.—RELIGIOUS TENETS.—FESTIVAL DAYS.—MARRIAGE CEREMONY.—CUSTOMS AND MANNERS.

THE supposition is natural to the mind of man in whatever position he may be placed, that a Being exists, superior to himself, who watches over and influences his destinies either for good or evil. While in his rude and primitive state, he hesitates with what attributes and powers to clothe this mysterious one; he is necessarily sensible that the sun is the source of light and heat, and that summer, whose genial warmth gives verdure to the earth, is the consequence of its protracted appearance. On the other hand, as winter approaches, he sees the flowers wither away, and the trees shorn of their leaves; he feels the cold and storms of the season; and therefore wishes for the return of that time of light and beauty which presents so many pleasing objects to his senses, and which alike enables him to provide for present wants and future necessities. Thus sensible of the great benefits resulting from the emanations of the sun, it cannot be a matter of surprise that this glorious luminary is associated in his mind with all that is good and powerful; and that a feeling of gratitude is engendered which gradually

merges into adoration. Hence, mankind, in almost every age and every country, in the absence of revealed religion, have worshipped the sun and fire as its prototype, under different features. In the new world the nations of the South adored it, and hailed the Spaniards as its children, a circumstance which considerably facilitated their conquest by the latter; and there is every reason to suppose that the practice existed amongst them from a very remote period. Phœbus, the light of life, was the favourite god of the Greeks as well from his being sovereign of the sun, as from other qualifications suited to the inclinations of a polished people. The sacred fire of the Romans, guarded and kept alive by the vestal virgins, was never to be extinguished; such an occurrence being considered as portentous of dire calamity to the empire. Anterior, however, to the era of Latin supremacy, fire worship was almost universal in Persia, and had already been reduced to an established form several hundred years before the birth of Christ. Thus, if great antiquity of origin, as some say, stamps to a certain extent the tenets of a creed with truth, that of the Parsees has strong claims upon our belief.

Fire-worship is said by some writers to have been introduced into Persia by Zoroaster or Zerdisht, an eminent philosopher, whom they affirm to have flourished in the sixth century before Christ. Others maintain that fire-worship existed long before that period (having been first instituted by another Zoroaster, a king of Bactria, who is supposed to have lived some time before the Trojan war, and who, like Pythagoras, admitted no visible object of devotion except fire, which he considered the most proper emblem of a supreme being), and that Zerdisht only reduced the practice to systematic order.

The followers of Zoroaster aver that extraordinary and miraculous occurrences preceded his birth, which event took place under most unusual circumstances; while his life was like that of all other celebrated law-givers, a tissue of marvels. For example, some of the old Persian writers say that he was induced, from motives of wisdom and virtue, to lead a solitary life upon a mountain, which he found one day in a flame of celestial fire, out of which he came unharmed, having been engaged on certain sacrifices to God, whom he declared had appeared to him. According to many of his followers, Zoroaster did not die a natural death, but was taken up into heaven.

The new, or revised doctrine, as it may have been, was first taught by Zoroaster in the province of Aderbijan, and spread rapidly from thence over the whole empire. Gushtasp, who was then sovereign of Persia, is said to have been converted by his son Isfundear, and to have subsequently built temples in every part of his kingdom, ordering at the same time 12,000 cow-hides to be finely tanned, that the precepts of the prophet might be written on them, and when this was done, carefully placing them in a vault at Persepolis.

A war with Arjasp, king of Tartary, was the result of this change of religion on the part of Gushtasp, which was prosecuted with the exterminating fury of fanaticism during its continuance. Balkh, then the capital of Persia, was taken and sacked, and all the priests and followers of Zoroaster there put to the sword. The Tartars likewise captured the sacred standard of Persia, the apron of the blacksmith Kawap; but in another engagement, Isfundear totally defeated them, slew their king Roweendeh, and recaptured the national banner.

Under the dynasties of the Seleucidæ and Parthians, the

religion of Zoroaster was neglected, and consequently became corrupted. Ardisher Babigan, however, a military adventurer, who rose from a low rank to the sovereignty of Persia, and who assumed the title of Shahan Shah, or king of kings, after overthrowing Arduan or Artabanus, the last of the Parthian monarchs, about the year 229 of the Christian era, restored the religion of the Guebres to its primitive purity.

From the reign of Ardisher Babigan, until that of Chosroes, the contemporary of Justinian, a period of about 300 years, the doctrines of Zoroaster were maintained in their primeval purity, and continued to be the established religion of the state. Mahomet now appeared before the world; and while still little better than an obscure adventurer, sent a formal requisition to Chosroes, then in the zenith of his power, to renounce the religion of his fathers; this he received with the utmost contempt, tearing the letter of the prophet to pieces; an act deemed sacrilegious by the Mahometans, and to which they ascribe all that monarch's subsequent misfortunes. The next attempt to subvert the ancient religion of Persia was made by the Caliph Omar, who effected a passage across the Euphrates with a strong body of Arabs, and although repulsed in several engagements, at length won an important victory, which paved the way for Mahometan ascendancy.

Yezdijürd III. on his accession to the throne, found his kingdom seriously threatened by the Arabs, and immediately despatched an envoy to their general, Saad, to effect if possible an amicable adjustment with him of mutual differences. Saad communicated with the caliph, and a deputation was sent by the latter to the Persian monarch, to whom the terms proposed were that his people should become converts to the Moslem faith, upon which

no Arab should enter his territory without permission. If they did not choose to do this, they should pay the taxes levied upon infidels; and if both these conditions were refused, they might prepare for war. Yezdijürd rejected these proposals with disdain, and prepared for hostilities.

In the first general engagement, the Persian monarch was defeated, and his army all but annihilated, the sacred standard falling into the hands of the enemy. After the battle Yezdijürd fled to Hulwar, with all the property he could carry, and continued the war for a few years; but his defeat at Nahavund decided the fate of Persia; its monarch, a fugitive in his own dominions, dragged out a miserable existence for ten years, when he was murdered, and the religion of Zoroaster terminated in Persia.

From the death of Yezdijürd, historians generally date the era of the modern Guebres. Shortly after that occurrence, the persecutions of their fanatical conquerors induced many of them to emigrate into Khorassan, where they remained for about 100 years; and some modern travellers suppose that the Siaposh Kaffirs, or black clad infidels, inhabiting a mountainous district near the Kama, are the descendants of these refugees; both from their manners and customs, different from those of their Affghan neighbours, and the remains of pyrathræ to be seen in their country. Certainly, from Khorassan a large portion of the Guebres withdrew to the island of Ormuz, in the Persian Gulf, where they staid for a period of fifteen years; when not finding it a residence suited to their wishes, they sailed for India, and landed at Diu. But on consulting their written oracles they ascertained a protracted stay here would not be auspicious; and again embarking on board their ships, they put to sea, and

reached a fertile part of the coast of Guzerat, after encountering a severe tempest, which seriously damaged their fleet. The prince of this territory received them favourably; but as they were numerous and well armed, he bound them to the observance of five conditions, ere he allowed them to land: That they should explain the mystery of their faith, lay aside their arms, and speak the language of the country, that their women should appear unveiled, and that their marriages, according to the customs of his people, should be solemnised at night. As there was nothing in the writings of the Guebres which forbade their acceptance of these conditions, they gladly consented, and were permitted to land.

The Indians, discovering something analogous between many of the strangers' principles and their own, treated them kindly, and gave them land to build a town on, which they called Sanjan; and shortly after, obtaining another grant of land, they erected a fire temple, in pursuance of a vow they had made should they escape the tempest which had assailed them. At this place they remained together for about three centuries, when they dispersed to Baroach, Surat, and other places along the coast; and in the lapse of time Sanjan gradually became depopulated. They were, however, recalled by the sovereign of Guzerat, on his being threatened with invasion by the celebrated inconoclast Mahmood of Ghuzni, in order to assist in the defence of his territory, when 1400 of them were found capable of bearing arms.

A large number of Guebres fell in an engagement with the Affghans, and the survivors fled, leaving their city to be pillaged; and carrying their sacred fire along with them, they proceeded in quest of another settlement.

Thus they continued to wander from place to place along the coast for several centuries, as though they were never destined to obtain a permanent residence, until at last they found a secure asylum in Surat, Bombay, and a few other places, where they are permitted to enjoy the free and undisturbed exercise of their religion.

Such of the Guebres as remained in Persia without becoming proselytes to Mahometanism, were treated with the greatest rigour, and their number gradually decreased. At Yezed, however, distinguished by the appellation of the Darub Abaduct, or seat of religion, the Guebres are still permitted to have an Attush Kudu, or fire-temple, in their own quarter of the town, which they assert has had the sacred fire in it since the days of Zoroaster. But for this indulgence they are indebted to the avar ce, not the tolerance, of the government, which levies on them a capitation tax of twenty-five rupees, besides leaving them without redress for the taunts and indignities ever levelled by fanatics at the followers of a despised faith. The religion of these Guebres does not exist in its original purity; their tenets having become gradually mixed up with those of the Christians and Mahommetans. The contrary is the case in India, where they have practised their worship undisturbed, and preserved some of their religious books, in a peculiar character, to the present time.

The Parsees maintain that an original principle, analogous to eternity, created light, water, fire, Hormuzd, the source of all good, and Ariman, the author of evil; speech preceding all creation, for by it the formation of beings and matter was effected. Hormuzd is adored for his beneficence, and Ariman held in detestation for his malevo-

lence. Their belief thus far closely resembles that of the Hindoos, whose three greatest deities are Brahma, the creating power, Shiva the destroying, and Vishnu the preserving. Many of the traditions of the Guebres relating to the early condition of the world, like those of the Greeks and Latins, are assimilated to Scripture truths, although barely discernible through the mists of fable which obscure them.

With respect to fire, the Guebres place its fountain head in the sun, called by them Mithras, or Mihir, and to which they pay the greatest reverence, as well in gratitude for the various benefits resulting from its ministerial omniscience, as from the belief that the throne of the author of all good is placed in that luminary. But they do not confound the creature with the creator. They view the sun simply as a passive instrument, controlled by the power of the deity, and as possessed of no qualities of sense or reason; while at the same time they only give it a secondary place among the works of creation, the first being occupied by the mind of man. According to their sacred books, the holy fire should be found in every town and settlement; and if necessitated to move, it should be carried with them. The Guebres allege that the holy fire, Behram, is the guardian of their abodes and destinies; that it is the extract of 1001 fires, taken from fifteen other fires; and that it must always be preserved unextinguished in absolute purity. Many sacrifices are performed before it, either by priests in their temples or by individuals in private. In the temples the fire burns on a vase, within a grating, which none may approach but the priests who keep it alive, and watch perpetually over it day and night; the light of the sun, from

its superior brilliancy, being carefully excluded. Should any person of another sect approach within the temple, the priests consider themselves defiled, and have to undergo a ceremony of purification, during the course of which they are suspended from the performance of their sacerdotal duties. As to these priests, the Guebres hold them in the greatest reverence, as has been the case in every age; and Gibbon, when speaking of their tenets, says: "If the destours, or priests, be satisfied, your soul will escape hell's tortures; you will have praise in this world and happiness in the next; for the destours are teachers of religion, they know all things, and deliver all men."

Independent of their sacred fire, the Guebres have the greatest veneration for that element in general, and when once kindled, they deem it sacrilege to extinguish it unless by a particular method. A candle must either burn out to the end, or if they wish to save a portion of it, the part next the wick is cut off, and being carried to the hearth, is left to burn out. A light is blown out with the wind of a fan or the hand, but never with the mouth, for that would be impure; and should their houses take fire, they will not permit the flame to be extinguished by water in the usual way, but pull down the surrounding parts, that it may expire of itself when it has nothing to feed upon; their principle being to let fire die away, without any endeavour on their part to abbreviate its duration. They will allow no person to meddle even with their shop-lights; and a European can scarcely insult them more grossly than by attempting to light a cigar or pipe with them. One of their traditions touching fire is very poetical; it says, that when

a child of a great prophet was thrown into a large fire by order of Nimrod, the flame instantly turned into a bed of roses, where the infant sweetly reposed.

The festival days of the Guebres are very numerous, but their principal festival is celebrated on the last ten days of the year, when they believe that the souls of the just descend within three bow-shots of the earth. They likewise carefully observe their birthdays, and those of their children, towards whom their conduct is affectionate and indulgent in the extreme. But in no respect are these people more singular or distinct from other sects than in the treatment of their dead. The corpse is placed in a round tower or circular edifice, open at the top, on a stone floor, elevated from the ground, and sloping to the centre, where there is a deep well or sink, into which the bones are gathered after decomposition, by means of an iron rake, subterraneous passages beneath communicating with the sink and preventing it from being filled up. Exposed to the birds of prey in this way, the bodies of the dead present a most revolting appearance. Yet the Parsees, from habit, look on with indifference, and even draw omens of good or evil as regards the state of the departed spirit, from the eye which is first plucked out by the hawk or vulture.

Marriage is a favourite condition among this people, while sterility is on the contrary a reproach. Polygamy is not allowed amongst them; yet if a man has no offspring by his wife, he may, with her consent, take another, she still continuing to live with him. When a young woman attains maturity, she may demand that her parents provide a husband for her, and if they disregard her request, it is considered a culpable negligence on their part; but if she, on the other hand, declines the married state, and dies a virgin at eighteen, her soul is believed to descend

to hell, where it remains until the end of the world. The marriages of the wealthy are celebrated with great pomp, and as I witnessed this ceremony while at Bombay, I will endeavour to describe it to the reader.

Happening to proceed to Fort George on business, I found the street it was necessary I should pass through literally blocked up with carriages, palanqueens, and people, and on inquiring the cause of this unusual concourse, I learned that a Parsee marriage was about to be celebrated. The wedding-guests or friends of the parties, to the number of about 500, were seated on forms placed at each side of the street, in front of the bridegroom's house, and these, clad in their costume of spotless white and singular hats, all exactly alike, presented a strikingly characteristic and unique appearance. Presently the bridegroom, a boy of about fourteen years of age, descended the steps leading from the door of his house to the street, his dress being completely covered over with gold leaf, and mounting a horse richly caparisoned, and having long garlands of flowers trailing from his trappings, one of his relations took an egg and cocoa-nut, as the emblems of plenty, from a basket filled with them, and after holding these above his head for a moment, dashed them against the ground, when the procession already marshalled moved onwards.

First came several carriages filled with children, from three to eight years of age, their little caps closely fitted to the head glistening with ornaments of gold, and in many instances with precious stones, the rest of their dresses being formed of the richest stuffs. After the carriages were borne palanqueens filled with the children of such as had no equipages. Next in the procession came several boys and girls on horseback, the former dressed

like English generals and staff officers, and the latter like English women, their horses being led by servants. A sepoy band in full uniform succeeded to these, which endeavoured to make as much noise as possible; being immediately followed by the wedding guests *en masse*, another sepoy band coming after them. Behind the band came between twenty and thirty low caste Hindoos, who exhibited a mock fight with short sticks, and after these were a crowd of native musicians, the noise of whose tom-toms, brass trumpets six or eight feet long, &c., &c., was absolutely deafening. The bridegroom now appeared, his horse led by his nearest relative, while several servants fanned him. He held a folded handkerchief in his hand, which he every moment pressed gracefully to his forehead as he salaamed the numerous spectators ranged along the streets. He was followed by about a hundred women, one of whom carried a silver lotah and a representation of a sugar-loaf in a line with her shoulder, as emblematic of the commencement of housekeeping. These were simply yet richly dressed in a gown and spencer, with large shawls of the choicest fabric thrown over their heads which fell in loose and graceful folds around them, exhibiting to the best advantage their deep borders of gold and silver lace: their stockingless feet, in many instances beautifully white, were encased in tiny kid slippers, peaked and turned up at the toes. Although the Parsee women are not, generally speaking, handsome, some of these, despite features of an olive cast, were so, and possessed those large melting eyes peculiar to Orientals, while their pencilled brows and glossy hair were both as dark as the wing of the raven.

The women closed the procession, which proceeded through various streets of the fort, returning at length to

where it had started from; that quarter being now lit up by innumerable small lamps, disposed in clusters, which produced a brilliant effect.

The Parsees of Bombay number most probably between ten and eleven thousand, and although it may be styled their head-quarters, a much larger portion of them are scattered through the various towns along the coast, so that on the whole the amount of this people in India cannot be much short of thirty-five or forty thousand. Many of them are very wealthy, and may be classed among the princely merchants of the earth; and taking them altogether, they are an industrious, enterprising people, among whom the extreme of individual poverty is unknown, as the rich invariably assist the poorer when required. They may be said to monopolise the trade of Western India, displaying in commerce the energy and acuteness of the British merchant, along with the craft and latent duplicity characteristic of Asiatics in general. The Parsees of Bombay have branch establishments in all the principal towns and military stations of the presidency, and in Lower and Upper Scinde; while their vessels trade to the several ports in the East and to England. In many instances, they have become extensive landholders by purchase, and their country-seats are mostly elegantly fitted up in the English fashion, whom they love to copy in every thing, with the exception of religion and dress. Their equipages are the most beautiful in Bombay; they use English saddles, and are good horsemen; and continuing the analogy, like many of our countrymen they will stop at nothing to acquire money, and have their prodigals to squander it again. Like the generality of Asiatics they are sensualists in their pleasures, and lascivious in their conversation, and many of

them keep European mistresses. They resemble the Irish for sociability of manners, and have houses in the country, the property of the whole fraternity, where they assemble for convivial purposes. On these occasions the *bon vivants* frequently quarrel in their cups; generally, however, at an advanced period of the night, when rows ensue which would rival those of Ireland.

In all the government and public offices, Parsees will be met with, either in posts of trust or as clerks; duties which are ever fulfilled with honesty and ability; indeed, as a people, they justly merit the indulgent light in which they are looked upon by the authorities of the presidency, being equally susceptible of polish and refinement with the European, although closely wedded to their ancient mode of dress and to their religion. A Parsee convert to Christianity is among the phenomena of the East.

CHAPTER XIX.

COLABAH BARRACKS.—DEPÔT WOMEN.—HALF-CASTES.—CONDUCT OF THE ADJUTANT.—THE MOHURRUN, MAHOMETAM SECTS.—SKELETON OF THE 78TH ARRIVES.—EMBARKS FOR ENGLAND.—ACCOMMODATIONS ON BOARD SHIP.—RATIONS.—SHIP'S CREW.—OFFICER'S IGNORANCE.—MAKES THE COAST OF AFRICA.—ROUGH WEATHER.—CLEARS THE CAPE SEAS.

THE weather was now delightfully cool and pleasant, and enjoying excellent health, I found that one could exist very tolerably even in India. Our barracks were in a pretty and healthful situation, on a small rocky island, shutting in the harbour to the north, and connected with Bombay by a causeway, and which is traversed by a road terminating beneath the light-house, at its further extremity. This road, lined with gardens and bungalows, many of the latter being pretty and even elegant dwellings, and commanding on one side a view of the harbour, with the blue hills on its opposite shore, and on the other side the open sea, is a favourite drive of the *élite* of the city in the evenings; and whenever our band performed, there was no lack of pallid faced lady listeners, whose occasional presence induced many of our officers to wear their most insinuating looks at Colabah. Nor were the soldiers behindhand in their devotion to the fair sex, with which the depôt barracks at this period were overstocked, owing to the widows having arrived from the different corps,

and the families of the soldiers in the field being there. Several were paired off prior to our leaving. These were escorted from the church by all the idlers of the corps, together with the band, which played its softest airs on these joyous occasions, the bridal party immediately behind stepping time with military precision, and a royalflourish of bugles greeting them as they entered the barracks.

But if these happy results were consequent on the many widows in the depôt, the wives of soldiers at the theatre of war in Vingorla also there, were the cause of the most abundant litigation. The conduct of some of these was profligate in the extreme; and an acquaintance with them led many of our fellows to suppose, that the remainder of the women were of the same stamp; never discovering their mistake until they became nocturnal visitants to their quarters, when an uproar ensued which led to their being lodged in the guard-room, and brought before the colonel, who, as a matter of course, severely punished them. And here I must say I felt much surprised that the depôt authorities did not endeavour to repress the irregularities existing at this time in the depôt-barracks, which was a scene of the most revolting grossness. At a subsequent period, when the invalids were embarking on board the *Herefordshire*, taken up for their conveyance to England, many of the women who accompanied them were so drunk that they had to be hoisted on board with a teakle.

During the month of January, I was so fortunate as to become acquainted with some respectable half-castes, a class of persons with whom I had hitherto been a stranger. In them I found the intelligence and quickness of the European united with the softness and amiability of disposi-

tion of the Hindoo. One of these was a writer in the principal military office in Bombay; and in consequence of my treating him on a footing of equality, persons of his class being very much looked down upon, he showed the utmost kindness to me during my stay in his neighbourhood. Well informed and devotedly attached to music, with which he solaced his leisure hours, his society had strong charms for one like me shut out beyond the pale of good company, and with him I felt myself completely at home. I owe much to the kindness of this person; and should these pages ever meet the eye of Mr. Wright, I would assure him that I shall long continue to appreciate his worth.

Great dissatisfaction was caused about this time by the conduct of the adjutant towards the non-commissioned officers of the regiment. He abused them in the grossest terms on the parade-ground and in the orderly-room whenever an opportunity presented itself, and few of them will forget his overbearing and insolent manner towards them, when he had collected them in the latter place, on one occasion, to harangue them in presence of the commanding-officer, who at length thought it necessary to interfere. The consequence was that the non-commissioned officers became completely discouraged and careless of what happened to them, and many of them resolved, on the first opportunity, to quit the corps. The very privates even, animadverted severely upon the manner in which the adjutant treated the non-commissioned officers; and I am confident there was not a man amongst us who did not feel relieved when our tyrant left us on leave of absence for England.

At this period it was currently reported that we were to be detained for twelve months at Bombay, as it was

said no troops could be spared from Vingorla from its unsettled state to supply our place. This would have been a sad disappointment to all of us who had set our hearts upon returning home; but we hoped the report was groundless, and that the Bombay government would not venture to detain us upon its own responsibility. The duty, too, was very severe; the men only getting one and two nights in bed; and weakly as they were, frequent guard mountings, and another sickly season in India, formed a most unpleasant prospect. Besides, one man out of every seven was in the hospital, where there were many bad cases of fever and dysentery; and deducting the sick with the men in regimental employ, there was little more than 200 men on the duty roster.

In the beginning of February, the Mahometan festival of the Mohurrum was celebrated; and as it was apprehended by the authorities that disturbances might occur on this occasion, a detail of 100 men of our corps was detached to the town, and had tents pitched for them on the esplanade. For several preceding nights troops of men and boys ran widely along the roads shouting Hulai, a corruption of the name of Ali, in commemoration of the slaughter of whose sons the festival is kept.

One sect of the Mahometans go to the mosque, and there beat their breasts and bewail the children of Ali; while another parades the streets with taboots, which are fanciful figures of mosques gilt over, and flags, accompanied by musicians, whose sole aim is to make all the noise they can. During these processions quarrels frequently take place between the Shiah and the Sunis, the two great sects into which the Mussulmen have split, and the utmost precaution is necessary on the part of the magistrates to preserve the peace.

The Shiahs maintain the right of Ali to have succeeded to the caliphate on the death of the prophet, as being acknowledged the first of all believers, and the husband of Fatima, the sole offspring of Mahomet; and therefore consider the three intervening caliphs as usurpers, and deny all the traditions which rest upon their authority. The Sunis, on the other hand, look upon these caliphs as the chosen companions and legitimate successors of Mahomet, and recognise the authority of the four great imaums or saints, Haneefa, Mulek, Shaffei, and Haubal, who were held in the greatest reverence while alive, and canonised as the high priests of the orthodox doctrine since their deaths. Both sects in general observe the same festivals; but the Shiahs have set apart the first ten days of the month Mohurrum to mourn for the fate of the sons of Ali, and they will then, the lower order particularly, pour out imprecations and anathemas against the Sunis and usurping caliphs.

In Persia, where the Shiah doctrine prevails, it was first adopted as the established religion by Ismail, in 1499. Nadir Shah, when at the zenith of his power, endeavoured to bring back his subjects to the orthodox faith, and to abolish the Shiah worship by severe penalties; but his attempts totally failed, and it still prevails in Persia. Their Affghan neighbours, like the Turks, are chiefly Sunites, class them in consequence as heretics, and never send their children to the colleges of the Persians. The Shiahs are very numerous in India, and closely wedded to their tenets; teaching their offspring of both sexes at an early age their creed as follows: "I believe in one God supreme over all, and him alone do I worship. I believe that Mahomet was the creature of God the creator. I believe that Mahomet was the messenger of God, the lord of

messengers, and that he was the last of the prophets. I believe that Ali was the chief of the faithful, the head of all the inheritors of the law, and the true leader appointed of God, consequently to be obeyed by the faithful. Also I believe that Hassein and Hossein, the sons of Ali, and Ali, son of Hossein, and Mahomet, son of Ali, and Jaufar, son of Mahomet, and Moosa, son of Jaufar, and Ali, son of Moosa, and Mahomet, son of Ali, and Ali, son of Mahomet, and Hassan, son of Ali, and Whidhie, (the standing proof) son of Hassan—the mercy of God be upon them ! were the true leaders of the faithful, and the proof of God was conveyed by them to the people."

During the earlier part of this month the remnant of the 78th Highlanders arrived from Kurratchee, and a large fatigue party of our men had to be sent to assist the sick on shore. Scarcely 100 men were able to march with the colours, and every one of these had suffered more or less from fever, their attenuated features bearing ample testimony to its baneful effects. They had lost from the period of their relieving us at Sukkur, until their arrival at Bombay, upwards of 700 souls. The greater part of their band had died, so that their march through the streets resembled a funeral procession, the dark plumes of their bonnets being in strange contrast with the grave-like hue of their faces. Their condition was sadly altered since I saw them reviewed twelve months before, when they were a superb body of men.

Shortly after this occurrence I became convinced that the government of Bombay had seriously determined on retaining us for the season; they had advertised for no

tenders from masters of vessels for our conveyance; and this fact, reviewed in connexion with official documents which had passed through my hands, offered abundant proof of the meditated injustice towards us, they probably considering we would patiently acquiesce without a murmur. The month approached its termination; still there was not a word about our departure; it seemed as if we had been totally forgotten; and with the resolution that this should be no longer the case, I sat down and wrote a letter to the editor of the "Bombay Times" on the subject, which duly made its appearance in the columns of his paper, with the signature of "A Soldier in the Ranks." Another letter from an officer, relative likewise to our detention, came before the public along with mine; it was a furious philippic, although he was a native of a land proverbial for the caution of its people, and wound up with a learned quotation from Cicero. It is almost needless to state that neither of us knew what the other had done till the letters appeared. We had equal facilities of information, and the conclusion was too obvious to be mistaken. The end sought was attained; and the authorities seeing we were not the passive folks they had imagined, informed us next day we were to be sent home immediately. Much curiosity was created in the corps as to who were the authors of these letters; but that feeling was not gratified, for both the officer and I kept our own council.

The proceedings of the government in relation to us became now the perfect antithesis to the previous state of things. Ships were taken up, and preparations made with the greatest rapidity, and we were told that little more than a fortnight would intervene till our departure. In the beginning of March a wing

of the 2nd, or Queen's Royals, came to relieve us, the men looking sufficiently harassed after a five months jungle campaign.

Much uncertainty prevailed for some time as to the exact date of our embarkation, which was finally fixed for the 20th March; and when the wished for morning at length arrived, the different barracks presented an animated scene of bustle and preparation. Shortly after daybreak I got coolies to convey my boxes to the bunder, and stepping into a boat along with another sergeant, who, like myself, had nothing to do with the men, I soon stood on the deck of the *Boyne*, one of the two vessels chartered for our conveyance to Gravesend; the other being the *Cornwall*, on board of which was the head-quarters, and rather more than two-thirds of the regiment.

At an early hour next morning the sailors commenced clearing the cables, which had got foul of each other, and by noon the anchor was weighed and sail made, a gentle breeze bellying out the canvas, and wafting us slowly through the shipping in the harbour. When opposite the light-house we lay to for the skipper, who was on shore; and while in this situation the *Cornwall* passed us, the men on board cheering us long and loudly, while the band stationed on the poop struck up "Home, Sweet Home." It was a pretty sight to see this vessel gracefully moving along, and dashing the white foam from her bows, while answering cheer after cheer mingled with the clashing band, the music of which came softly and more softly upon the ear, as she widened her distance between us. The *Cornwall*, however, was not very far a-head when our skipper came on board, and every sail was shook out in order to overtake her; but she lay beau-

tifully into the wind's eye, while we went to leeward, our vessel thus showing her inferiority of sailing.

The *Boyne* had been surveyed for the conveyance of 250 people, and half that number had come on board, with ten invalids of the Company's service. Nevertheless we were not allowed half the deck, and were consequently much crowded, a large proportion of the men not being able to sling their hammocks. This state of things was at once made known to the commanding officer, the second lieutenant-colonel of the corps; but he, good man, took the matter very easily, and there was no improvement in our situation. Added to this, only half the men were supplied with bed-clothes; each person could therefore only get a blanket or a quilt, neither of which were any heavier than good flannel; and thus there was but a bad prospect of comfort when we got into the cold latitudes. Along with these annoyances the rations were bad; but as it was said there were better on board, which would soon be issued to us, we did not report them. Thus we were deficient of the three great desiderata of a soldier on board ship: sufficient room, warm bed-clothes (of the last importance to men quitting a tropical climate), and good rations, which, according to the government regulation, should be always of the best quality.

Shortly after we were clear of the coast, one of our men died, and we committed him to the deep in a few hours afterwards. The ceremony was solemn and impressive; and it was like taking a leap into eternity, as, with the weight of two heavy shot sewed up at his feet, he fell perpendicular upon the water, and disappeared instantaneously from our view. Meanwhile our rations had become worse instead of better; the biscuit, the grand

edible on board ship, was so full of maggots, as to be absolutely uneatable; and many loathing it, fasted from dinner to dinner each day, living on the little flour and meat doled out to us. The trade winds still continued to waft us pleasantly along, and no event occurred worth noting until the

4th May.—During the preceding night, while sailing at the rate of six knots an hour, the wind suddenly chopped round, and taking all the sail aback, threw the ship on her stern. It was very dark, and we were in some danger, the ship not immediately answering her helm; and what rendered matters still worse, the watch, with the exception of the man at the wheel, were all below fast asleep, leaving our watch to work the ship. The ship's crew was a bad, dissatisfied one; however, it is but justice to say the poor fellows were wretchedly treated; they had not half room enough, and the cook's galley being immediately over them, the heat and stench of their berths were intolerable. The result was, that several of them got ill, the larger part continuing so during the entire voyage; and although many of these had scurvy, they were neither given lime juice nor vinegar. With respect to ourselves, we were but little better off; the biscuit was bad, the flour was the worst Indian otta, and one moving mass of animal life; the pork was frequently measly, and would reduce to one-fourth the weight in boiling; and the peas served out for soup were germinating. It was alleged in excuse, that these rations were passed by the committee at Bombay; but the skipper seemed to be ignorant, as well as our officers, that its approval did not lessen his responsibility. One would imagine, that when government was paying 19*l.* 10*s.* for each man's passage to England, and the

soldiers were chiefly working the ship, that at least, though stinted in room, the victuals given us would be good and wholesome. But it is an old adage, "that it is a bad wind that blows nobody good." The skipper's pigs benefitted by our bad biscuit, of which they got by far the largest share.

It would be an invaluable boon to the soldier, if a code of regulations of a more explicit and minute character than those which at present exist were framed, for the information and guidance of officers on board ship. Though certainly I must say, those with us did not seem to profit much by the instructions they had by them. One of them stated, it was only his duty to see the proper weight given, without at all attending to quality; forgetting that the commanding officer is to make minutes of every deficiency, which he is to forward on landing to the agent of transports. I venture to say ours never did his duty in this respect; and that the agent of transports, nor any other agent, ever knew one iota of the manner in which three companies of the 13th Light Infantry were treated in the freight ship *Boyne*. We got our grog before dinner, and were obliged to drink it at the tub, which was highly injurious to a hungry stomach; no distinction being made between the private and non-commissioned officer, whom the sage authorities placed perfectly on a par. Neither were sergeants formed into a separate mess; being, therefore, most disagreeably situated, subjected as they thus were to numberless petty annoyances at the hands of ill-disposed fellows, but too glad to have an opportunity to inflict such with impunity.

7th.—We were in sight of Cape Auguillas, the most southern point of Africa, when the day dawned. The cliffs were white, and reminded me of the English coast;

on a near approach I found this appearance was produced by the snowy sand thrown up against them by the sea. The weather had now become very chilly; we felt extremely cold and comfortless during the night, from the want of sufficient bedclothes; and fever and ague, which yet rankled in their blood, became very prevalent among the men, who were still allowed by our sagacious rulers to sleep on deck, where they were frequently wetted by the sea breaking over the vessel. At this period, the long nights hung very heavy on my hands, having no light to amuse myself by reading; and I often longed for the summer day of home, and its lingering twilight.

Next day, as there was every sign of an approaching storm, the top hamper was lightened, and all made tight aloft. During the night it blew very hard, and a heavy sea broke over the weather quarter and started every thing that was not very firmly lashed upon deck; to the imminent danger of the watch, nearly all of whom were thrown down. About an hour afterwards all hands were called up to bout ship, the skipper apprehending we had got too near the land. This took a long time in performing, the yards not paying round properly; and the vessel, caught helpless in the trough of the sea, rolled fearfully, boxes and every thing flying from their fastenings between decks; where a scene of the most indescribable confusion ensued, as many of the men lay upon the planking. As to myself I had only slung a hammock for a few nights during the voyage, having no place to put it; and sleeping upon my boxes, which were not more than eighteen inches wide, with the first roll the ship gave I was tossed off these and dashed against the opposite side of her, without however being much hurt.

10th.—The morning was cold and clear; and the wind

having shifted in our favour, we sailed rapidly along in sight of land which presented a bold line of coast shelving down to the sea, the hills in the interior occasionally assuming the most grotesque and curious forms imaginable.

11th.—The wind continued favourable, and we were still running along the land. In the evening three albatrosses were caught with a hook baited with a bit of pork. During the whole of this day I walked the deck in order to keep myself warm.

The night proved beautifully fine for the first few hours, the stars shining clear and bright in the blue empyrean. Presently a dark cloud was seen above the horizon, which gradually spread itself across the sky, rendering the stars invisible, until it came at length directly over our heads, when the breeze ceased, the sails fell listlessly against the masts, and the next moment a smart wind came right ahead taking them aback. Much of the canvas was now taken in, a most fortunate thing for us all, as towards morning a terrific gale sprung up from the south-east which must otherwise have carried away the masts.

During the two succeeding days the weather continued rough, no land being visible. On the 14th it fell a dead calm, and the vessel rolled very much. Our watch were still obliged to remain all night upon deck; which was highly injurious to our poor fellows, many of whom were still suffering from the malaria fever. On the contrary, the sailors' watch staid below, with the exception of one or two who remained on deck to point out to the soldiers the ropes they were to pull when their services were required.

15th.—A stiff gale again right a-head, and the topsails were double-reefed. The weather continued rough until the

17th.—When we encountered the severest storm I ever witnessed at sea; but its fury fell only on bare masts, all the canvas having been taken in with the exception of a solitary storm stay-sail. The vessel pitched and laboured fearfully, and men and boxes were flying to and fro between decks, the former in several instances being precipitated to the deck from their hammocks, the fastenings of which broke by the constant chafing. At one time a thunder-clap was heard immediately over our heads, and the lightning illuminating between decks with such brilliancy that I thought the ship had taken fire, I contrived to get upon decks through the after-hatchway, ours having been nailed down, but was obliged to descend again almost immediately after ascertaining we were still safe.

The storm continued until the 21st, the sea all the time resembling the seething cauldron of the witches in Macbeth. Several whales swam around the ship during the day. The weather still continued excessively cold, showers of sleet and hail occasionally falling, and we suffered much at night for the want of sufficient bed-clothes, being obliged to sleep in our uniforms. On the 23rd we spoke an English vessel in 33 deg. 50 min. south latitude, and 17 deg. 20 min. east longitude, which had been fifty-two days on her passage from Liverpool.

25th.—This was a lovely day, the firmament was without a cloud, and the sun shone bright and warm. We were clear of the Cape seas, and had caught the trade winds, which wafted us pleasantly along. It was Sunday, prayers had been read, and there was a quiet repose about the day which, contrasted with the dark tempestuous ones of the preceding week, was quite delightful. We had suddenly passed, as it were, from the snows and

chills of winter to the genial temperature and mild radiance of the month of May.

31st.—The Cape hen had at last disappeared; it lingered around us long after every other bird of the Cape seas. Although we were now in 22 deg. south latitude, the nights still continued raw and cold.

CHAPTER XX.

ARRIVES AT ST. HELENA.—VISITS NAPOLEON'S TOMB.—ST. HELENA REGIMENT.—STATISTICS OF THE ISLAND.—ITALIAN NUNS.—PUTS TO SEA.—IS BECALMED.—MAKES THE AZORES.—ARRIVES IN ENGLAND.—MARCHES TO WALMER.—IS HARSHLY TREATED.—IS DISCHARGED.

3rd JUNE.—AT daybreak we were close to the island of St. Helena; but it was noon before we cast anchor off the town, or rather village of St. James. The view as we approached this place, was singularly striking; dark beetling rocks rising perpendicular, or nearly so, from the ocean to the height of 1,000 feet, along the faces of which winding paths are cut, and batteries perched here and there in places one would suppose, when seen from the sea, to be almost inaccessible. The town is situated at the bottom of a gorge or chasm, averaging about 100 yards in breadth, and running inland for about half a mile; towards the sea it is defended by a strong line of works, mounted with heavy cannon and mortars, which are flanked by batteries on the hills at either side; that to the left being the celebrated Ladder Hill, ascended by a wooden stairs several hundred feet in height.

Next day, liberty having been given for a portion of the troops to go on shore, I procured a pass, and getting into a boat with several others, I soon found myself once more on *terra firma*. The grand object with most of us

was to see Napoleon's tomb; and passing quickly through the town in company with half-a-dozen comrades, we commenced ascending the hill to its right along a zig-zag road cut in its face, which only admits of the passage of a single car, unless at considerable intervals. After an arduous and fatiguing walk, we reached a point which a stone informed us was a mile from the town, and 1,180 feet above the level of the sea. The view from this place was most magnificent. Far beneath lay the little town as if in a map, so completely did we command it; while through the vista formed by the hills at either side, the sea was seen smooth and unruffled, as though it were a vast sheet of glass; the ships in the roadstead resting motionless on its bosom, their several national flags unstirred by a breath of wind.

After enjoying this bird's-eye view for a few minutes, we pursued our way up the hill, having as yet accomplished little more than one-third of its ascent. I toiled on tolerably well for another mile, when I was compelled to halt, having got a pain in my side, and feeling otherwise unwell and dizzy; indeed I had been rather ill for the few preceding days, owing to the bad unwholesome rations we received. For a time I thought I must return to the town without seeing the tomb, but feeling much better after half an hour's rest, I again proceeded upwards, meeting several groups of the islanders driving asses before them laden with bundles of firewood brought from the other side of the island, and vegetables for the market. These were laughing and chatting as gaily as though their home was a Paradise, instead of being a sterile rock rising out of the southern ocean apart from the world. As I approached the top of the hill, traces of an extinct volcano were perceptible, and one spot in particular was distinguished by a number of conical hills formed of lava. A

little further on I entered a grove of fir-trees; and a breeze now setting in from the south-east, I felt it delightfully cool. Hitherto the heat had been most oppressive, and I felt it doubly so clad as I was in full uniform, with sash and side-belt on.

Immediately beyond the grove I reached the top of the ascent, which is called the "Alarm-post," where I found a long thirty-two pounder in battery. My difficulties had now terminated, the road forming a gentle descent along the side of another hill, with a plantation on its right which screened me from the sun. After traversing this for about half a mile, I came to another road branching off into a gorge to the left, and here a board, bleached from long exposure to the weather, and elevated on a post, had on it the sentence in half obliterated letters, "This is the road to Napoleon's tomb." Proceeding by this direction, I came to a neat white-washed cottage at the bottom of the hill, the residence of the widow of an officer of the old St. Helena regiment, whose chief support is a tax levied by authority on visitants to the tomb. Having duly discharged this claim, an old man conducted me to the tomb, which is situated in an enclosure, fenced in with wooden paling, and planted with cypress and willow, and a few rose-trees, none of which grew there at the time of Bonaparte's death. One withered stump alone remains of the trees which then shaded this retired spot, the French taking the remainder away when they removed his body to France.

The grave in which the body of Napoleon was deposited is surrounded by a small iron railing, and covered over with a tarpaulin, raised like a tent, so as to permit of persons passing beneath it. It is now open, and one de-

scends into it by means of a step-ladder. It is walled all round, and is about ten feet in depth, nine in length, and five in breadth. In this narrow home, as I was informed by my cicerone, who had been a soldier, and lived nearly forty years on the island, was laid the man who aspired to universal dominion, in full uniform as a marshal of France, with even his long boots on. It was his own choice to be buried in this spot, which had at one period been the crater of a volcano. It was when he lived, as it is now, a retired and pretty place; the most so, indeed, on the island; and a meet last home for fallen majesty. Contrasted with the barren hills encircling it, where a few dwarfish goats and sheep glean a scanty subsistence, it seems like an oasis in the desert. Like Shakspeare, he wished to sleep in quiet, nor in all probability did he once think that his remains would ever rest among the great though volatile people he had ruled.

At the distance of a few yards from the grave, a spring gurgles from the base of a rock, whence visiters, if they wish, are supplied with a glass of the clear sparkling liquid, by the wife of the old soldier, who is always in attendance, and who tells them that Bony himself often drank from it.

As future mementoes of my visit, I plucked a rose from a bush nigh the grave, broke off a sprig of the cypress, and, in addition, received from my guide a bit of the plaster from the niche where the coffin had been deposited, which he dignified with the name of Roman cement. This old man, who was still hale and hearty, had been well acquainted with the emperor, having frequently done duty over him while he lived at Longwood.

My return to the town was a matter of most easy accomplishment, when compared with my ascent; and

when near it, diverging from the direct road, I found myself at the cottage where Napoleon had dwelt when he first landed on the island. What must the ex-emperor's sensations have been when he first saw that what must be his residence for a time, was little superior to the habitation of many a peasant, or humble English tradesman.

After resting myself, I paid a visit to the barracks, which will accommodate between 400 and 500 men; but the square is so small, that a company can scarcely be manœuvred on it. The present St. Helena regiment, embodied some three years since, and formed of volunteers from other corps, is composed of five companies, of seventy-five men each, who are mostly under thirty, yet dissolute and disorderly in the extreme, no less than fourteen of them having been transported since their formation, while one-half their number have been tried three or four times over by court-martial. They are said, however, to be harshly and unwisely treated. On one occasion I was told that some sergeants went into a cell where several drunken men had been put, and irritating language being used by them, they were struck. Courts-martial followed as a matter of course, and the men were transported, or severely punished. Were they in India, Sir Hugh Gough would in all probability have reduced the sergeants.

One company of the St. Helena regiment is stationed in the fort on Ladder Hill for six months in turn, where they are trained to work the guns: they seemed to like being quartered there very well, many of them saying they should be quite glad when their turn came round again. With respect to their rations, the men are allowed fresh meat brought from the Cape twice a week, and salt meat the remaining days with fresh bread and vegetables, the

latter being grown by themselves on a farm given them in the interior of the island, having besides a daily allowance of wine. For these they pay sixpence per diem, their tea, sugar, &c. costing them threepence more, so that their clear pay, when other expenses are deducted, is a mere trifle. Their wives and children receive rations from the government stores, the same as the men, with the exception of wine alone.

In St. Helena I found the necessaries of life were excessively dear, potatoes sometimes selling so high as a pound per hundred weight, their average price being usually about twelve shillings; beef is tenpence and a shilling per pound, and milk a shilling per bottle; goats sell for two, three, and even four pounds; and cows, sheep, and horses are dear in the same proportion. English goods rate higher than in any part of India. Labourers receive from three to four shillings per diem, and even at this pay it is difficult to get the islanders to work, for they are excessively lazy, and will idle as long as they can get a little rice and fish, their staple article of provision.

Like Bombay, St. Helena formed a part of the dowery of the Infanta Catherine of Portugal, and was ceded to the Company with the former island. It is only valuable as an intermediate and watering station for ships sailing to and from the East, the greater part of which touch there. Twenty years ago the number of ships which annually watered there, was about 150; now, however, 2000 vessels of different nations touch there in a single year; and the coin of every maritime country in Europe, as well as those of America, may be procured in St. James's town.

The productions of St. Helena are of a very trifling character, although the soil is a dark loam and rich looking, but at the same time so very shallow that the sun

penetrates through it to the stratum of rock beneath, which, retaining the heat, prevents vegetation to any extent. Hence the island has a barren appearance, and is very unlike what Cavendish represents it to have been in 1587, being then, according to him, extremely fertile in corn; the growth of which other writers subsequently stated to have been abandoned, owing to the vast number of rats which infested it.

The water on the island is considered good; it is, however, strongly impregnated with chalybeate and other minerals, and from this cause cannot be boiled for washing clothes, the steam being highly injurious to the sight, and producing blindness in a little time. Ships are supplied with it in a very expeditious manner by means of tank-boats, from which it is pumped through a hose into the casks in the hold.

For a place lying within the tropics, St. Helena is exceedingly healthy; dysentery is the most prevalent distemper, yet it is by no means of an acute character when looked to in time. Occasionally small-pox makes its appearance; and when there was a depôt for negroes taken from the slavers on the island, it made considerable ravages among them.

5th.—During the morning some flying fish were brought on board, measuring upwards of a foot and a half in length, they were the largest I had ever seen before, and were very plump. Having no inclination to go on shore, my feet being blistered with walking already, I amused myself for the better part of the day in conversing with the islanders who came on board. One of them, an old man, told me that times had altered much for the worse on the island, since the death of Buonaparte. "While he lived," he said, "there were always two regiments lying there, and these, with the sailors of the guard-ship,

and the men of war constantly cruising about, spent a great deal of money in the town, its inhabitants reaping a golden harvest. But now," added he, "there is only the St. Helena corps with us, and they are more trouble than profit; volunteers never do well in colonial regiments, being generally a reckless, desperate class, fond of change, whereas here they only get an occasional march up to Ladder Hill and down again, and are all as heartily tired of us as we are of them. Few men of war ever touch here, and their stay is short; and as for the merchant sailors," he continued, "they seldom have much money to spend."

Next day I went ashore again to make some purchases, and particularly biscuit; that served out to us being still of the most wretched quality. The sun was setting as I returned to the beach, having been detained thus late by some of our fellows who had got drunk, with the view of making the most of their time, this being the last day on shore. Our boat, as we proceeded to the ship, passed close under the stern of a large French barque, on the poop of which were three Italian nuns singing their vesper hymn, with that taste and execution for which their nation is so celebrated. One of these was a pretty, if not a beautiful woman, with a chastened expression of countenance, which reminded me of a Madonna. As we got farther and farther away, their fine voices rendered even still more musical by the distance, came upon the ear with exquisite effect, and I felt sorry when I reached the vessel, being no longer within hearing. On gaining the deck a disgusting scene met my view on the forecastle, where the drunken men had been confined, and were now engaged in fighting with each other.

At daybreak on the 8th, the anchor was weighed, and we stood to sea, and as the sun arose, the shipping and

town had already grown dim in the distance; the scathed brows of the black beetling rocks wreathed with silver mist, which rose high above them, looming gradually less darkly as the vessel sped farther away; until at length crag and hill lost their distinguishing outlines, and were blended together in one blue cloud, which, as noon approached, faded from the horizon.

Nine invalids of the St. Helena regiment had been sent on board, and each man of these were supplied with two good blankets and quilt, and had as much room given them as thirty of our men. Some of these were mere boys; and when I contrasted the kindness and attention shown them in providing for their comfort, with the manner in which the veterans of the 13th were treated, who had grown grey under an Indian sun, and performed marches unparalleled in the annals of British warfare, I could not feel otherwise than surprised. We had fifty invalids on board, passed as such by the principal medical officer of Bombay, yet they received scarcely any indulgence, and were even obliged, unless actually in hospital, to do all manner of duty. Like the remainder of us, they had not sufficient room nor good rations, nor bedclothes; and why the Bombay authorities, or their satellites, thought it right and meet to treat us in this way, in defiance of the government regulations, it is difficult to divine. A very late general order in particular, issued by the Duke of Wellington, peremptorily provides that troops embarked in freight ships and transports, be furnished with a hammock and two blankets each: its number is 566, and it bears date, Horse Guards, 9th June, 1843.

In the evening some of the women and children became very ill, in consequence of having eaten fish; that caught

at St. Helena growing poisonous when kept a second day. Emetics being, however, immediately given them, no bad consequences ensued.

12th.—Saw the island of Ascension in the morning. Men-of-war stationed off the coast of Africa to prevent slaving have a depôt for stores there, guarded by a party of marines, who have to be supplied with water from St. Helena, there being none on the island.

During the day our commanding officer issued an order that a sergeant be stationed night and day at the weather gangway to receive the orders of the mates, and see them carried into execution by the men; the sergeants were, therefore, much worse off than the privates, there being only nine to do duty on board.

15th.—Crossed the equator at six a.m.; weather tolerably cool, the S.E. trades still continuing to blow.

19th.—Completely becalmed, and showers frequently fell, which, crowded as we were, rendered us most uncomfortable.

25th.—The calm still continued, and the delay added to our other evils, made us miserable. As night came on a heavy shower fell, and when darkness had set in the sea was all sparkle with phosphorescent light; the effect produced by a shoal of porpoises as they plunged about, being very brilliant. But a shoal of flying fish produced a still more beautiful effect; the water dripping from their finny wings, forming streams of light which scattered into numberless scintillations as they fell upon the surface of the sea.

28th.—A breeze sprung up at last to our great joy, and shortly after an English vessel hove in sight which was spoken with. In the course of the day, a sailor who had been a long time ailing, and could not use the rations given

him, stole bread from the cook's galley; taking, however, every thing into consideration, one could not feel inclined to blame him. He was an American.

7th July.—The preceding night was very dark, and the look-out on the forecastle having gone asleep, a large vessel, outward-bound, approached quite close to us ere she was seen, and were it not that the skipper had gone for'ad on some business, and perceived her, directing the steersman to luff immediately, she must have struck us amidships. As it was, the stranger, who seemed to be equally as little cared for as our own vessel, passed close under our bows, the flying jib-boom almost touching her rigging. Had we struck we must have gone to the bottom, as the other vessel was so much larger, and running right before the wind, with her stansails set, at the rate, it was supposed, of twelve knots an hour, while we were going, close hauled, at nine knots, so that the collision would have been fearful. To prevent a recurrence of this kind, a sentry was planted over the look-out, whose duty it was to see that he did not fall asleep.

10th.—The men were much more cheerful now than they had been for some time previous, from the prospect of speedily getting ashore; and in the evening a dance was got up, the commanding officer giving such as used their legs best a glass of grog each. This so encouraged others, that after the dancing had terminated they came forward on the quarter-deck, a part of which was kept clear by way of stage, and sang several songs; the last being in character by a Dublin man, a vulgar wag, and of a peculiar class in that city, distinguished for a union of low wit and blackguardism, which caused roars of laughter; the colonel himself laughing most un-Chesterfieldishly as loud and long as any, until a sly allusion was made to the excellent

cabbage and parsnips grown in Carlow, his native county, when he retreated in high dudgeon to his cabin, thinking himself glanced at, as indeed he was. During the remainder of the voyage he never honoured our amusements with his august presence again, and played cards at night with more zest than ever with his subalterns; whether they fleeced him, or he fleeced them, I cannot say; but this much I will say, that it was very evident he did not study the regulations of the service very long or very often, or he would have made the discovery that gambling, even among officers, is prohibited by them, and very strongly too.

17th.—At length a report being made by the acting-quarter-master-sergeant, that the men were little better than starving, a superior description of biscuit was issued. Many still continued to suffer from fever and dysentery; and as to myself I was now always ailing, my system gradually becoming more and more shattered.

22nd.—Saw Flores, one of the Azores or Western Islands, in the morning; a dead calm coming on when still about a league distant; and as the skipper was short of provisions for his table, he had the cutter and gig lowered, and sent ashore for a supply, a village being discerned at the foot of a mountain, which rose almost from the water's edge. The islanders would not permit any of the boats' crew to land until they had first ascertained whether we were free from contagious distempers, and had come with no hostile intention. After nightfall a breeze sprang up, and the boats coming off soon after, sail was made, and in the morning nothing was to be seen of Flores.

30th.—Cloudy skies and chilly days had succeeded to the clear blue firmament and warmth of the central lati-

tudes, while the stars, there so bright and large, had dwindled down into tiny twinkling things. During the preceding week, light winds and calms had followed close upon each other's heels; and being now nearly twenty weeks at sea, we felt heartily tired of our quarters, and longed—earnestly longed to be on land.

5th. August—Hove in sight of the experimental fleet cruising off the mouth of the Channel; but we soon lost it again, as the day was very hazy.

6th.—Saw English land to our great joy, in the morning early, a fair wind carrying us up the Channel at the rate of nine knots an hour.

7th.—Made Gravesend, and as the anchor was let go a cornopæan-player on board a river steamer complimented us with "Home, Sweet Home" and "Auld Lang Syne," we responding, in the fullness of our hearts, with cheers loud and long. Shortly afterwards some of our officers went on land, and when they returned in the evening, one of them was gloriously drunk; conduct many of ourselves resolved on imitating the first opportunity, so much greater influence has example than precept.

8th.—Disembarked in the morning, and found myself on English ground, two years and some weeks after I had quitted it: many of the men expressed the most extravagant joy, and one old veteran in particular knelt down and kissed the earth. The disembarking officer, contrary to our expectations, did not ask whether we had any reports to make; much to the disappointment of several who had determined to complain of the manner in which they were rationed during the voyage. As we marched silently through the gateway of Chatham barracks, I bethought myself of the old soldier who remarked when last

I passed it, and the detachment was cheering loudly, that we ought not to cheer till we came back. That detachment was composed of eighty men, of whom scarcely forty had returned; one-third of the remainder having died, and the rest volunteered, while of the latter several were killed in storming a Baloochee fort.

After lying for a few days in Chatham barracks, we marched to Walmer, where our head-quarters, which had landed a fortnight before us, was stationed. I now resigned my orderly-room clerkship, and was appointed full corporal and supernumerary sergeant, receiving a promise of promotion on the first vacancy; and zealously set about learning my new duties, having resolved to remain in the army, as my friend still continued in embarrassed circumstances, though not to the same extent as when I had left Ireland. Besides, I had become attached to a military life, in spite of its hardships, and felt myself quite at home among the veterans of the 13th.

But I found it would be next to impossible for me to remain in the corps, as I had by some means become disliked by the adjutant, who, however irreproachable my conduct had been, seemed now disposed to treat me any way but kindly, taking every opportunity to annoy and insult me, and even using abusive language towards me while at drill. Still I bore all this patiently, hoping that good conduct and a zealous and correct discharge of my duties might induce him to deal more fairly by me. But I might as well have pursued an opposite course; a private was promoted over my head on a vacancy occurring, and this injustice, along with a series of other circumstances, so disgusted me with the army, that I wrote to my friends for money, and applied for my discharge; much, indeed,

to the surprise of the adjutant, who now saw that he had carried matters a little too far, in thus compelling me to quit the regiment.

Shortly after I had lodged the application for my discharge, the sergeant-major endeavoured to fathom my motives for so doing, giving me the assurance, at the same time, that if I remained in the corps I should have the next vacancy, and otherwise holding out every inducement to me to stay. The following day I was up with some prisoners before the colonel, being sergeant of the main-guard; and after they were disposed of, the adjutant remarked to him that I had applied for my discharge; but that the sergeant-major had given him an excellent account of me, and that so promising a non-commissioned officer ought not to be permitted to leave the regiment. The colonel said that he was very sorry I should think of quitting the corps, as my conduct had always given him the utmost satisfaction, adding, that if I would remain, I should have two months' pass to go and see my friends. But my resolution was already taken; and despite what Sam Slick would term the soft sawder of the adjutant, and the well-meaning kindness of the good old colonel, it remained unshaken.

I received my discharge on the 15th of October, and in a few days afterwards I found myself once more at home, surrounded by relatives and friends, all pleased and happy at the return of their wanderer, whom, for a long time, they had despaired of ever seeing again.

LAST CHAPTER BUT ONE;

ADDRESSED TO THOSE INTERESTED IN THE WELFARE OF THE SOLDIER.

THE CLASS THE ARMY MUST BE DRAWN FROM.—MILITARY LAWS OF PUNISHMENT AND REWARD.—CORPORAL PUNISHMENT: HOW IT MAY BE RENDERED LESS FREQUENT.—NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICERS, &c. &c.

HAVING once obtruded myself on public notice, I beg in conclusion to lay before my readers a few remarks on the condition of the soldier, with a view to its capabilities of improvement; trusting that they will at least obtain an impartial hearing, as emanating from one who has had some experience of the effects which the existing state of things in the army is calculated to produce, and who can honestly declare that his sole object in making these remarks is the well-being of those whom he speaks of.

I neither seek to propitiate nor to offend, but to serve; and I think I cannot better effect my purpose than by plainly speaking the truth as regards my convictions, which I feel confident are shared by a large portion of our troops, a vast majority of whom, at the same time, being incapable of clearly stating their views, the latter are only to be known by long and continual personal intercourse.

In a monarchical state, where no strong inducements exist to individual patriotism, it will ever be the case that

such as possess adequate means of support will eschew the life of the private soldier; and that, therefore, this class of the army must be formed of the indigent and others, who, from motives of necessity, shall be content to endure the privations and hardships which especially belong to this grade of military service. Great Britain must ever be content to draw the grand *matériel* of her armies from the lowest classes, and no endeavour on her part, compatible with the public weal, and it might be said, with her very existence as a great nation, can effect an alteration in this respect. A great many arguments have, however, been adduced to prove the possibility of inducing a better and more enlightened class of men to enlist than at present compose the bulk of our soldiery, and certainly, viewing the question *primâ facie*, it would seem to be most desirable and important. The army would be improved in a moral sense, and so rendered more respectable as a class; the next matter for consideration being, how such improvement would affect the interests of the body politic at large.

Great Britain, with a dense population, and numerous large cities and manufacturing towns, where the mind is familiar with depravity from childhood, must have, as a mere matter of course, a proportionate number of profligate and worthless persons. Legislative wisdom ought to be directed so as to prevent the growth of this class; and this, although certainly to a limited extent, is at present produced by our military service.

The British army, as is well known, is the *dernier resort* of the idle, the depraved, and the destitute, the larger part of whom make good soldiers, and therefore become useful, if not even valuable, servants of the state.

It cannot be otherwise than highly beneficial to a community, to have what is, or must ultimately become, a nuisance, or an expense, changed into a decided good; the industrious, intelligent, and well-disposed, who must ever be eminently useful in their several spheres, being protected in their various avocations and pursuits by those who heretofore might justly be designated the drones of the hive; whereas, were a contrary state of things to exist, and such to be refused an asylum in the army, there must, as an inevitable consequence, be an increase of crime. How impolitic would it be to drain society of useful members for an end (setting other considerations aside) to which men of inferior stamp would, morally speaking, have answered equally, or, at least, nearly as well. And taking the question in a physical point of view,—from the hardy manner in which the lower classes in these kingdoms are reared, being accustomed to privation from the very cradle, the soldier is capable of enduring the greatest hardships, and of performing the longest marches, while he is second to none for animal courage. In this respect, no improvement can be made; on the contrary, every change must be for the worse; since, the higher we ascend in the scale of society, the less able will persons be to endure fatigue or privation.

It is evident, therefore, that for the well-being of society as well as from the pressure of circumstances, the common soldier must still continue to be drawn from the *lower orders; and that attention should consequently be directed, not to having him an intelligent or estimable individual on enlistment, but to rendering him so afterwards.* How this may be effected I shall endeavour to show.

Any one acquainted with the character of the soldier,

must be aware that he may be said to be wholly a being of to-day, very rarely indeed bestowing a thought on the morrow. This is caused by the peculiar circumstances of his situation, which free him from all manner of care, it being the business of others, and not his own, to see his wants provided for, so that he has no occasion to glean experience from the past, nor to trouble himself about the future. Indeed this very carelessness may be said to be truly the *summum bonum* of his existence, for, were the soldier to be a reflecting being, his thoughts must have a tendency to make him unhappy, or at least uncomfortable, as they would naturally turn on the privations and miseries which at one period or another must fall to his lot, and on his chances of a violent death. Therefore, reward or punishment held forth for the expiration of his service, has no influence on his conduct whatever, until the time of his discharge approaches. A man may indeed be deterred from enlisting, although only in a very few instances, by the prospect of the smallness of the pension; but when once in the army, and his character as a soldier formed, he never troubles himself about any such thing, nor even feels concerned as regards additional pay whilst serving, until a year or less before he becomes entitled to it. It is evident, then, that present punishment and reward will alone influence the conduct of the soldier: a principle but partially recognised by our military government.

On entering the army, the recruit, though of the most irreproachable character, and equally intelligent and well informed, finds himself completely on a par in the estimation of his superiors (who seldom take any trouble to learn what sort of person he is), with the dissolute and depraved; whose example and companionship cannot, therefore, fail to have the most evil effects upon

him; there being no counter influence to check the growth of vice, nor inducement—unless a prospect of punishment may be so called—to correct and moral conduct. The hoary debauchee, habituated to every vice which disgraces human nature, is ever too eager to fasten upon the recruit, in order to mould him into a creature like himself; and render him familiar with all that is gross or detestable. Every lure is held out, every inducement offered; and when these fail of success, ridicule, which the young so especially dread, is had recourse to as a last and rarely fallible resource to effect the desired object; and the recruit, once in the path of vice, progresses onward step by step, until at length he is but too well qualified to become the instructor of others in the same course.

Some commanding officers are aware of the existence of these evils; of what disgust the well-disposed man must feel, to find himself placed on a footing with the unprincipled and the base, and also of the effect which a little timely encouragement and reward would have, in rendering him pleased with the service in which he is engaged, and causing him to feel an honest and useful pride in the maintenance of an unblemished reputation. Foremost amongst these, I would place Lieutenant-Colonel Derenzy, of the 86th regiment, whose regulations are eminently calculated to produce this desirable result. He has divided his corps into classes, by which he has drawn a broad line of demarcation between the good, the middling, and the bad. From the first class, non-commissioned officers are selected; while the commanding officer grants it, besides, a variety of little immunities and privileges, of a nature extremely gratifying to the soldier, and in no way affecting discipline. Admission into this class, after a certain probation in the one beneath; is a strong

inducement to good conduct there; those in the third class being likewise advanced to the second, after a defined period of absence from the guard report.

The great aim of military governance should be, not to make a man think he has lessened himself by joining the army, but, on the contrary, to impress upon his mind that he has embraced an honourable profession, in which good conduct and a zeal for the interests of the service must infallibly lead to his own advancement, and improve his condition in life. I am well aware that many salutary regulations have been made with this object, the greater part of which, however, have produced no beneficial results; and why? because those on whom success in attaining the ends sought for in reality depended, were incapable of, or negligent in, carrying out the intentions of the framers. To this we owe, to a large extent, the great number of courts-martial in the army now (from twelve to eighteen occurring in some regiments in a single month); and the frequency of corporal punishment. Gibbon, when speaking of the armies of the Roman Emperors, tells us that "the peasant or mechanic imbibed the useful prejudice, that he was *advanced* to the more dignified profession of arms; and that although the prowess of a private soldier must often escape the notice of fame, his own conduct might sometimes confer glory or disgrace on the company, the legion, or even the army, to whose honours he was associated." Now the British soldier possesses a great deal of a certain kind of honour, and what is termed *esprit du corps;* and one soldier can scarcely insult another more grossly than by speaking ill of his regiment. Why not divert these feelings from this sort of petty rivalry into a more legitimate channel, and teach the British soldier, with the Roman

legionary, to imbibe the useful prejudice, that his conduct in quarters and in the field may confer glory or disgrace on the company or the regiment to which he belongs; instead of telling him, as I have heard him told, in presence of numbers of others, by an officer of Prince Albert's Light Infantry, that he came into the army to have his belly filled.

As in the case of the civil code, it is not military law of itself which directly controls the conduct of the soldier, but the manner in which it is administered; and the Mutiny Act and Articles of War, as they affect him, can be rendered almost a dead letter, even in very extreme cases, at the pleasure of the commanding officer or others; more especially when a regiment is on foreign service, on a frontier station, and thus removed from the immediate surveillance of the higher authorities. I could bring forward a variety of cases to prove this, out of which, however, I shall only select three, which will fully demonstrate its truth; and which, having occurred at a very recent period in England, and within a few yards of the residence of the highest military authority in the kingdom, may still be made the subject of investigation. In September, 1845, a soldier of the name of Higgins was taken up drunk in the town of Deal by the picquet, and struck the corporal commanding it (an act which subjected him to trial by general court-martial), but was subsequently released by the connivance of the adjutant; the first major then commanding the corps, in the absence of the colonel; the object being, I have every reason to suppose, to screen the existence of serious crime in the regiment, from the general of the district. Shortly afterwards a corporal of my company (Molony) got drunk on duty, which I was about to state in the course of my evidence before the court that tried him, but was

prevented doing so by the adjutant, who, in framing the charges against him, had omitted that clause, in order to extenuate his crime (although he had but a short time before been tried for a similar offence, reduced, and again restored), which was thereby rendered simple drunkenness. The third case was a very gross one. A Sergeant Templeton, in command of a picquet, stabbed a soldier without due provocation; afterwards effecting forcible entry into the houses of inhabitants, showing them his drawn bayonet, and stating that to be his authority for so doing. I was present at the investigation held next day by the adjutant, when the offence was clearly proved by towns-people and soldiers; yet this sergeant was released from arrest *unpunished*, while at the same time other men who had not committed offences of nearly so serious a character, had the preambles of their charges, and the charges themselves, so worded by this very officer, that they received sentences totally incommensurate with their crimes.

In this manner many salutary regulations of the military law—and that military law has such, few will have the hardihood to deny—are too often defeated. By such partial and unwise proceedings, many men who might by judicious management have been reformed are utterly ruined; they see others, in many cases even more guilty than themselves, treated with indulgence, simply because they are favourites, while their own offences are visited with severity. What feelings must this sort of conduct engender in their bosoms towards the officers? Surely, both contempt and dislike, while it must render themselves the more reckless and desperate.

Speaking of punishment, it may not be amiss to offer a few observations with respect to that of flogging,

which forms the most prominent feature in our military law, and is applied to the following offences only:

1st. Mutiny, insubordination and violence, or using or offering violence to superior officers.

2nd. Drunkenness on duty.

3rd. Sale or making away with arms, ammunition, accoutrements, or necessaries; stealing from comrades, or other disgraceful conduct.

For which offences a general court-martial has power to award 200 lashes, a district 150, and a regimental 100.*

I regret that I cannot bring myself to think that corporal punishment can be dispensed with altogether in our military service; for, in the first place, the soldier is frequently so situated that none other is practicable, and in the second, without it capital punishment would have to be more frequently had recourse to. The point I would wish to establish is this, that its infliction can be rendered of much less frequent occurrence than at present.

The beneficial effect of example is one of the principal arguments in favour of flogging; and no soldier will pretend to deny that it has not a powerful influence on his mind, when witnessed for the first two or three times; but then his horror and disgust insensibly wear away, until at length, from habit, he can look on with the most perfect and apathetic indifference. Thus the frequency of corporal punishment completely neutralises the benefit of example; and when one sees the same man undergo it over

* These remarks were written before the late occurrence at Hounslow, which has had the effect of inducing the commander-in-chief to limit the punishment, even of a general court-martial, to fifty lashes. I have made no alteration in consequence. I wish the reader to understand that the views I entertain on this subject are the result of my own experience, and in no respect induced by any participation in the excitement occasioned by the case referred to.

and over again without wincing, one is disposed to think very lightly about it as a punishment. But these are not the worst features of the case. The man who has been flogged is not put apart from his fellows, with whom he still continues to eat and drink and associate in every respect as before; and they soon cease to bear in mind that he has suffered a disgraceful punishment, or even that the punishment is at all disgraceful; and at length learn merely to applaud or condemn, according to the manner in which the man at the triangles undergoes his sentence.

Some say that it is the crime and not the punishment which is looked upon as disgraceful by soldiers; but such have never been in the army, or surely they would have known that among privates there is as strong a feeling of sympathy towards offenders (unless, indeed, the offence is committed against one of their own body) as ever was evinced by the good people of Tipperary in favour of the perpetrators of Agrarian outrage.

One method to render corporal punishment less frequently necessary, would be to turn over offenders, whenever practicable, to the civil power, which, in cases of theft especially, will generally award much severer punishment than a court-martial, the structure of which, besides, is not suited to try persons arraigned for crimes of this character. A military court is a matter-of-fact tribunal, capable only of deciding upon straightforward evidence, and will not, therefore, appreciate circumstantial evidence, nor convict on the testimony of a single person, should the traverser plead not guilty. Another argument in favour of this course is, the great latitude which can be taken with impunity by the prosecutor in framing charges, which may be worded, as already shown, so as to diminish or add to the crime

itself; a circumstance which the court, in the existing order of things, cannot become aware of.

But the great *aim* in the infliction of the lash—if we would wish to render it less frequent in the existing order of things—should be to make it as much a final punishment as possible; for the army, as a body, can never be susceptible of much moral improvement, while it is made the receptacle of criminals, kept in it by way of punishment. This circumstance of itself is sufficient to cause the honest soldier to blush, and lower him in his own estimation, reflection teaching him that he is no better than the associate of the common thief. If, however, it might not be considered advisable to discharge offenders altogether, and I am certain it would not, they might be sent to the dockyards to complete their service at manual labour, or only permitted to return to their regiments after a defined term of good conduct. Classes in this case could be formed; so that the offender, even while a *detenu*, could effect an improvement in his condition by his own good conduct; and thus it would be easily ascertained what men were utterly irreclaimable, and such as it would not be advisable to have in the service under any circumstances. Unless something of this sort is done, and improvement effected with present means, the army can hardly remain very long as it is. Old institutions are daily crumbling away before the unsparing hand of reform; and it will scarcely fail to share the same fate, if the abuses at present existing, as regards the administration of its laws, are allowed to continue. Public feeling is setting fast against corporal punishment, and no wonder! for instead of its being reserved for a time when no other punishment is practicable, or, as one might say, for real exigencies, when its infliction is alone excusable, it is con-

stantly witnessed in every part of the British dominions. It is my firm conviction that in time of peace, unless with regard to mutiny or striking superiors, flogging might be altogether dispensed with. These are offences which must be visited by it, or by some other punishment of a nature still more severe. In time of war, while the lash hangs *in terrorem* over the soldier, whose passions will then need a powerful check, the officer will scarcely be inclined to use it unless in very extreme cases. So much is then dependant on his men, whom, for his own sake, he will endeavour to preserve in as good spirits as possible. Unless I mistake very much, there was no flogging in Jellalabad during its siege; the men then were courted and cheered in every possible way, and the officers were most condescending; a condescension the former dearly paid for afterwards on reaching India, where they were taught not to presume upon the past, by courts-martial and floggings so numerous that the adjutant-general at length, fairly astonished, inquired in an official letter what was the matter with the *Illustrious* * 13th. And in these kingdoms, where there are such facilities of punishment, flogging even with regard to mutiny or striking superiors might be done away with, by making all serious crime in the army cognisable by the civil power, for which purpose a bill could be very easily framed.

Corporal punishment, and punishment of every kind, would likewise become less frequently necessary, by providing a more intelligent class of non-commissioned officers than the service at present possesses: but before I enter upon this question, I must beg it to be borne in mind that my remarks hitherto have had respect only to the private soldier.

* So called by Lord Ellenborough.

The non-commissioned officers of the army are drawn from the same classes as the privates, to the generality of whom they are in no way superior; the qualifications for promotion being simply reading and writing very tolerably. But few, in the system as it exists at present, could ever think their non-preferment to be an injustice, as their own sense must teach them they are not calculated for a superior grade.

It has been stated by some one well acquainted with the service, that there should be as strong a line of demarcation drawn between the sergeant and the private, as there exists between the sergeant and the officer. This, however, it is impossible to effect, from their collateral origin, and from the habits which intimacy, similarity of feeling and constant association, produce; serious evils, therefore, frequently result. I have myself often seen sergeants drinking, amusing, and making themselves "hail fellow well met" with privates, whom in a few minutes afterwards they were absolutely obliged to confine, and who then used the most contemptuous language towards them, for not conducting themselves more in accordance with their rank. But this is not the worst feature of the case. Familiarity on the part of sergeants with privates often induce the latter to commit offences in expectation of escaping with impunity, as they generally do, unless in offences of a serious character. Such non-commissioned officers can never do their duty fairly; their orders are always cavilled at, and obeyed with hesitation, which frequently obliges them to descend to argument. Let us look at the contrast presented by the sergeant who never approaches to familiarity with the men under his charge, and deals fairly and kindly by them. He does his duty uprightly, in the proper spirit of military rule; and is not only obeyed

with the utmost readiness, but respected and liked. Nothing, indeed, can produce worse results, than for a sergeant, or even corporal, to descend to argument with the privates. Mutual recrimination usually follows; hostile feelings arise in the bosoms of both parties; and the former lets no opportunity escape to annoy and punish, while the latter learn to brood over their wrongs, let them be supposed or real, until ultimately they resolve on a desperate revenge. From this cause spring two-thirds of the murders in the army.

As to the characters of the generality of non-commissioned officers at present, wisdom cannot be considered as forming their most prominent trait; but they possess a great deal of what is designated cunning, which seems to be the peculiar forte of the class. Unlike the private, they are not independent of their superiors even while they do their duty; and consequently they are obliged to propitiate them by servility and meanness, and to mould themselves to their wills. Thus, from studying the passions and weaknesses of others, and being obliged at the same time to conceal their own, they become adepts in duplicity, and doubly dangerous to those beneath them who may happen to incur their dislike, and whom they will endeavour jesuitically to crush by indirect means. The exercise of petty power sharpens the wit, and stimulates hitherto latent propensities; and deep strokes of policy are sometimes made in a corps by the non-commissioned grade, which would do credit to a disciple of Machiavelli. In many instances, sergeant-majors, by sinister methods, exercise more real power, as regards the private, than the commanding officer; who permits himself to be influenced by his artful representations, personally or second-hand, through the adjutant, whom he

wheedles by "ear tickling." So admirably skilled are they in this art, that they sometimes even procure commissions by means of it. In one instance, especially, which came in a measure under my own observation, a man who had been tried and convicted by a general court-martial for sleeping on his post, and was afterwards arraigned for perjury, receiving three months' imprisonment for the latter offence, was yet able to manage matters so, that he was returned in certain official documents as of the most exemplary character; and finally, by flattering the foibles of an adjutant and others, succeeded in getting a commission.

When a regiment is on home-service, and a young man of decent appearance and evident intelligence enlists, the commanding officer may be induced, should he be so fortunate as to come under his notice, to promise him promotion, provided he conducts himself well. This often creates jealousy in the bosoms of the non-commissioned officers, who, from his evident superiority to themselves, dread his eclipsing them at some future time, and therefore consider it their interest to crush him as soon as possible. Unfortunately this is usually but of too easy accomplishment. He is induced to drink by some of their creatures; and having no one to advise with, is utterly unconscious of the precipice they are leading him to, until he falls in an unguarded moment; thus losing the good opinion of his colonel, who, ignorant of the artifices used, will naturally be led to consider him unfit for promotion. In this way many promising young men are ruined in the very onset of their military career; nor is this the worse feature of the case, for the commanding officer, resolving not to be again deceived by appearances, becomes doubly cautious as to whom he will any more

assist with the language of encouragement. And even when a deserving young soldier is promoted, the greatest prudence is still requisite on his part, as his very action and word are watched by men anxious to lay hold of something to his injury; if he is guilty of an indiscretion, the members of a certain clique, existing in nearly every regiment, will soon know all about it; nor will it fail, in an aggravated form, finally to reach the ear of the officer, who sends it round the mess-table; and the man is thus injured far more than if a straightforward report had been made of him. But if, on the contrary, a young soldier on promotion has some old non-commissioned officers versed in all the diplomatic wiles (so to speak) of his fellows, to take him by the hand, to put him on his guard against their intrigues, and to avoid their confidence, he will rarely, if a person of sober habits, get into a scrape. As the majority of this crafty class are drunken debauchees, he will be more than a match for them.

When we recollect the great influence which non-commissioned officers exercise on the conduct of the soldier, from immediate intercourse with him, and personal knowledge of his character, the mischief which can be done by them, if ill-disposed, will be at once apparent. Nothing irritates men more than the petty tyranny of those whom they know to be no better than themselves; and how frequently has it been the case that sergeant-majors have almost driven their corps to the verge of mutiny. I have myself known pay-sergeants to do the same thing with their companies, the men of which, prior to their having any connexion with them, were as orderly and well-disposed as any could be. The non-commissioned officer, in short, forms the grand connecting link in

the chain of discipline; he is the point upon which others turn the machine; and he cannot be too well-informed, too honourable, or too estimable an individual.

At present, a recruit after enlistment rubs off a certain quantum of his rusticity, and acquires a degree of polish which belongs to the army; and here his improvement terminates, as he is now equal to his companions, and has no one to copy superior to himself. This, however, would not be the case were some institution to be formed, in which young men of good character could be fitted for the duties of non-commissioned officers; the candidates being drafted from the line on or after enlistment, and their qualifications tested by a close investigation or a probationary term. An institution of this kind would be an invaluable boon to the service. From it a few non-commissioned officers could be supplied annually to the several regiments; the deserving still being promoted as heretofore; and commanding officers would soon cease to be, as at present they frequently are, puzzled who to advance.

By raising the character of the non-commissioned officer, the service will be benefitted; and the soldier will be benefitted, and will more readily and willingly obey, because he succumbs to one, who, under any circumstances, ought to be his superior. Even supposing that a sufficient number of a superior stamp cannot be found; and although they shall constitute, as it were, a small and select class; still their example and intelligence would have a powerful influence in forming the characters of others, and inducing them to seek improvement.

The formation of a corps for disciplining and otherwise instructing non-commissioned officers, would be productive of but little additional expense, as it could do the duty of

a regular regiment in some garrison town; and every consideration of a pecuniary character would be counterbalanced in a tenfold degree, by the momentous benefits which must result. In the first place, intelligent and well-disposed persons on entering the army, would not be disgusted by finding themselves placed under the control of the ignorant and the narrow-minded, and associated with the bad and unprincipled; and they might rest confident of soon gaining the position their character and information entitled them to. In the second, numbers of respectable young men would be glad to join the service; in which an improvement suited to the times, and the universal increase of knowledge, will thus be effected; and the army as a body, raised in the scale of society. And when sergeants might be considered eligible for the superior grade of a commissioned officer, they would not be the objects of contempt, as so many are now who rise from the ranks, owing to their ignorance and awkward behaviour in society; and, even with regard to non-commissioned officers themselves, officers would scarcely feel inclined to treat men, their equals in many respects, in the manner they do now, although such are their assistants, frequently their instructors, both in quarters and in the field.

A corps of this kind would likewise afford great facilities to poor officers to provide for their sons, who might receive commissions at a certain stage of proficiency, to be ascertained by a board. Thus, in the course of time, we should have a number of experienced officers; and not mere boys as at present, who issue from some public school, their heads' antipodes still smarting from the birch, to lord it over grey-headed sergeants, who, for half the period of

their service (often for the whole) must be their prompters and instructors. Our army would likewise gradually become more assimilated to the navy; and money would cease, in a great measure, to command preferment for dolts, who, in many instances, after a long service, embracing sometimes half their lives, cannot put a regiment through half a dozen manœuvres correctly.

CHAPTER THE LAST,

CHIEFLY ADDRESSED TO THE SOLDIER HIMSELF.

It has been suggested to me since I sent this volume to the press, that it might with advantage contain some hints for the guidance of any intelligent young person about to enter, or who may have already entered, the army. Feeling considerable interest in every thing connected with our military service, I lend myself to the furtherance of an object of this kind, as far as memory permits me, with pleasure; and with the hope that some other individual may be induced to follow in the same path, who is more capable of giving advice from possessing greater experience in such matters than I can lay claim to.

When the intelligent youth is reduced by any cause (no matter of what nature) to the necessity of becoming a soldier, being wholly destitute of other means of support, he should not permit a reckless desperation to fasten upon him, as is so often the case, but on the contrary, should prudently and warily follow the course which will be productive of most advantage to himself, and which I will now endeavour to point out.

In no place are first impressions of more value than in the army, and he should be careful if possible to have these always in his favour; to effect which it is certainly

necessary to possess some share of tact and knowledge of human nature. These will soon be acquired by industry and observation.

Much depends upon appearance in making an impression in one's favour; a circumstance which is little attended in general by young men on enlistment, and who I would therefore recommend to join their corps in as decent habiliments as possible. In a depôt, respectability of appearance is not of much use to a person as regards future promotion, and first impressions there are consequently of very little value; but this is not the case in a regiment where one comes immediately under the notice of the commanding officer, who must feel pleased when he sees men whom there is every reason to suppose he may patronise with credit to himself, willing to place themselves under his control. A person, therefore, who is desirous of profiting by the impressions in his favour which is likely to be produced by appearance, should always enlist at the head-quarters of a regiment.

With respect to what sort of corps a young man should join, I would recommend one not coming from off active service, as veterans always look upon recruits with the most sovereign contempt, and think any thing done for them a violation of their own just rights. He should also, when about to enlist, go either to the sergeant-major or to the adjutant for that purpose, and not to any others; by this means he will at once be brought into contact with the very persons it is his interest soonest to be acquainted with, and without whose countenance and favour it is impossible to get on; while, at the same time, either of them can do him more disservice, and make his situation more miserable, than any other persons in a corps.

Compared with these dignitaries, captain and lieutenant are mere cyphers; they are the hinges upon which a regiment turns, as far at least as the lower grades are concerned; and the rest can do very little more than oil them in one's favour. He may indeed consider himself a fortunate fellow who can at once jump into their good graces, as a word from one or the other to the colonel will have a vast influence on his future destinies.

But supposing he fails in procuring an immediate impression in his favour, he may in the course of time obtain their good opinions by studying their characters, and arranging his proceeding accordingly While thus occupied, he must be careful to make no confidants; as "tale-bearing" prevails to an unlimited extent in the army, from the great encouragement it receives; and if he cannot keep his own counsel, others will hardly keep it for him. I must not be understood as recommending him to *appear* reserved; if he does so, the generality of persons will be equally so with him, and he will fail of hearing many things, a knowledge of which may be advantageous to himself. On the contrary, he must act upon the Chesterfield principle, to be as communicative as he pleases of matters of no importance; but at the same time carefully to conceal what ought to be a secret, as otherwise he will be sure to regret it.

He must likewise be equally chary never to make his superior, particularly his officer, the subject of other than laudatory remark. If it is the reverse, as regards an officer at least, it will be sure to reach the ears of the latter in the most disagreeable way; and though the soldier be the most deserving person possible, he may thence forward fling his hopes of promotion to the winds, unless that officer dies

or exchanges. To illustrate this, I will relate an occurrence which happened to myself.

While ascending the river Indus, I was one evening conversing in confidence with another non-commissioned officer, who, whilst we were thus engaged, cast some invidious reflections upon his superiors as to their want of education. I stated that I did not consider his remarks could be generally applicable, and if many of them were ill-educated, it was because they had entered the service at an early age. About a fortnight afterwards I joined headquarters, and had totally forgot the circumstance in the meantime, when going to the colonel's bungalow one day to do some business for him, it was very forcibly brought to my recollection by the adjutant angrily demanding if I had not said that the officers of the army were in general ill educated.

It seemed that the non-commissioned officer, who was an old soldier, and had himself made the remark, as already stated, on our conversation terminating, had gone directly to an ensign, and told him it was I who had said so. This ensign, on joining, told the story he had heard to the adjutant, who, unfortunately, scarcely possessing the first rudiments of an education, considered himself as especially glanced at, and rated me soundly, although I urged in my defence that I felt confident I could never have made such a statement. That adjutant, I must confess, was an excellent man, and liked by every body ; nevertheless, so thoroughly was he an officer, that I am certain I should have remained a private soldier during my term of service, had not a promise been already given to the contrary.

If such a thing were possible, it would be of the greatest

benefit to the young soldier to have a scale given him wherewith he could measure adjutants and sergeant-majors. This, however, cannot be done, as there is no small diversity of character among them, as well as among other people. With respect to adjutants, some are tyrannical; others consider themselves the cleverest fellows in existence, and imagine that they are the mainsprings of discipline; the planets of the service, and that all the generals that ever came, from the *Iron* one to *Tom Thumb*, are little better than their satellites. Others, again, think themselves wits; and aping a *Jeffreys*, dole out seven days' pack-drill, or a month's confinement to barracks, with a jest repeated so often, that their truant memories forget to remind them it is a pilfered one.*

It would be a difficult matter to discover the weak side of an adjutant; he is at once, cold, stern, and impassive, from a consciousness of the dignified position he occupies. The strict disciplinarian—the man who can act up to the letter of the regulations; frame a plausible excuse to the "powers that be," when a blunder is committed; and hoax the War-office in a return—can be known by the wrinkles (a disciple of *Lavater* would designate them thinking ones) which mark his brow. Nevertheless, even an adjutant may be induced to smile upon the intelligent recruit if he can give him a good *carry-arms*, touch his cap for him with the precision of a machine, and further his views when a witness at a court-martial, by acting exactly as he (the prosecutor) tells him.

* An adjutant of this stamp, some three years since, was severely rebuked by a soldier, whom he made the subject of a jest while up in the orderly-room for some offence. "Sir," said the man, "I came here to have my crime investigated, not to be jested with; but I perceive you learned to act the *jackeen* before the gentleman."

With regard to a sergeant-major, if the recruit would propitiate him, he must pay him as much court and deference as possible; and supposing he gives him an officer's salute now and then, by way of a half-mistake, in the course of time he may, very probably, become his right-hand man; and, once allowed to dole out the pipe-clay he issues to the privates at one penny each per month, he may rest certain of promotion.

Having now introduced the intelligent recruit to the adjutant and his shadow with all due form, we must return to whence we started, namely, the period of enlistment.

Supposing him to be attested and located in the barrack-room, I need scarcely say that he finds himself in a position which is not exactly the one he imagined he must have occupied. He has now got behind the scenes, and is most probably ready to say with the clockmaker of Yankee notoriety, "It tant all gold that glitters." He feels himself most uncomfortable; is without sufficient room; his bed is not the soft couch he has hitherto been accustomed to; his diet is rough and unpalatable, often unwholesome; and worse than all, he must listen patiently to the rude jest, brutal remark, and cutting taunt levelled at himself, which assail his ears. Still it is equally foolish and idle to allow any one of these things to make him unhappy; on the contrary, it is his wisdom to be as contented with his situation as possible. It has been said by a modern novelist, and very wisely too, that "Wherever your lot is cast, duty to yourself and others suggests the propriety of adapting your conduct to the circumstances in which you are placed (so long as morality and decency are not violated), and that the manifestation of one's own superiority may render the purchase too dear,

by being bought at the terrible price of our neighbour's dislike."

A young man of spirit will find nothing so difficult to bear with, at his onset in the army, as the taunts of his companions, as the insults they may offer him. Still, unless these are of such a nature that they cannot be overlooked, his only plan should be to take as little notice of them as possible. Indeed, there is very little use in getting angry, as he will thus afford his tormentors amusement; and besides, may have to fight some dozen battles with all the chances of defeat, which will render his situation worse than ever, and also procure him the character of a quarrelsome fellow, a very bad one in the army. Again, when he resents petty insults, he places himself, to a certain extent, on a par with those who offer them; and as that is the object chiefly sought to be produced, they are encouraged to pursue a similar course whenever an opportunity presents itself. But if, on the contrary, he listens calmly and quietly when insult is offered, feeling himself above the notice of it, the very insulters themselves will soon get ashamed of their conduct; and if he adopts an amiable and inoffensive line of behaviour, they will finally respect and like him. He must, however, recollect, that while he feels his superiority, he must be content that it be wholly of a passive character; but once let him assert it, by word or action, and he will become an object of dislike which will render his position a most disagreeable one. When an opposite course can produce no good result, he should endeavour to live as quietly with his comrades as possible; at the same time I would not be understood for a single moment as recommending him to let himself down to their level, for that is a thing he need not do. Supposing that they ask him

to give them drink, if he has money, by all means let them have it; but let him decline, positively decline, drinking with them, and they will soon cease to solicit him to accompany them to the canteens, and will leave him quietly to pursue whatever course he likes.

I have known several possessed of information, to commence their career in the service by openly expressing their surprise at the ignorance and want of education perceptible in some non-commissioned officer under whose charge they were placed. This is a very ungenerous and a very unwise course of procedure. In the first place, it proves that a person thinks far too highly of the little he may know, without reflecting how trifling are his acquirements, when compared with those of others. In the next it shows a censorious disposition—a bad one, by-the-by—in Her Majesty's service, "where the least said," according to the vulgar adage, "is soonest mended." A man, if he does know a little more than another, should reflect that the other might never have had the same opportunities with himself, and may be otherwise a very estimable person.

A great many respectable young men, after joining the army, allow themselves to fall into the dangerous error of being discontented with their situation, which evinces much want of common sense, when destitute of the means to purchase their discharge. What good, let me ask, can result from conduct of this kind? None whatever. It is more foolish than applying plaster to an incurable wound, for it causes the wound itself to become doubly painful. And besides, it shows a weak, womanish disposition, to fret and chafe at evils it is impossible to remedy, and to which one must adapt himself whether he will or no. Would it not be a much better and more manly course,

for a person to meet his hardships and privations, in military parlance, with a bold front; to use every honourable method to promote his own interests and improve his condition by the means *within his reach;* and then, even if he fail of success, he will at least have the consolation —of the greatest moment to the unfortunate—that his disappointments are not owing to his own negligence or misconduct.

Again, discontent may cause a man to become reckless of himself (while at the same time the feeling gradually fastens upon his mind, that he has already descended as low as it is possible for him to go), until at length he becomes desperately drunkard and debauched, and wholly negligent of the prominent truth of every-day life, that nothing is more valuable to a man than character, no matter what may be the position he occupies. Indeed, at present, discontent (which certainly their condition is very much calculated to produce) is one of the principal reasons why respectable young men in general do no good in the army; and in any position of life as well as there, a person dissatisfied with his lot, and given to gloomy repinings, will never succeed in improving that lot, because he seeks for what he cannot get, and will not use the means he possesses to attain the end.

I would therefore recommend the soldier to be careful that he does not become dissatisfied with his condition; to look at the brightest side of the picture with the resolution that every legitimate exertion shall be made by him to improve his condition as a soldier, but never for a moment to brood over his wrongs or his misfortunes be they imaginary or real, or to look at things with the jaundiced eye of discontent.

It is almost unnecessary to say, and yet it is a thing

which cannot be told too often, or impressed too strongly on the mind of the young soldier, that obedience, and that of the most prompt and implicit character, is the first and most important duty. Without obedience of this sort there can be no army; for the regulations or laws which restrain civil society, unless in very remote cases, can never be applicable to a military body, which it would be utterly impossible to govern by them. Armies in all ages and under all circumstances have been ruled by despotism, and whether they belong to monarchical or republican states must be wielded by the same absolute system. The ancient Romans, although fighting from motives of the purest patriotism, were nevertheless bound by their laws, and by the most solemn oaths on taking the field against an enemy to render an implicit obedience to their officers; and it was an inflexible maxim of their discipline that a good soldier should dread these more than the foes of their commonwealth. Obedience must always be rendered by every grade in an army to its superior grade, from the common sentinel to the general; there is nothing humiliating in the former doing what his officers are obliged to do; and without learning to obey, he will never understand how to command.

It may sometimes happen that a soldier receives an improper order, or does not get his tour of duty fairly, yet even under such circumstances, it is still his duty to comply with the directions he receives, as otherwise he is equally as liable to punishment as if these directions were strictly in accordance with the laws of the service. If he wishes to have justice done him, let him first obey and afterwards make his report; when the person who issued those improper orders, &c., will be certain, if there are

no partialities in the way, to get punished.* But at the same time I would strongly impress upon his mind that he should never make a report unless when a real and serious injury has been done him. Nothing can be more improper in a soldier than to make frivolous complaints of a superior, as he thus gains the character of a troublesome fellow; and the person offended, if of a malicious disposition, will not fail to notice the slightest offence, and have him punished for it. And besides, a person who is fond of preferring petty and vexatious complaints (apart from the liability to punishment he himself incurs) against his superiors or his comrade, whatever may be his abilities, cannot be considered as fitted for promotion; and in the end he will find it would have been much wiser for him never to have indulged in a practice of this sort.

The next matter which demands our notice as regards the soldier, is drunkenness, many of the evils resulting from which I have already pointed out; nevertheless, as the indulgence of this vice is productive of so much misery to him, while sobriety on the other hand is of such great benefit, I think I may with propriety make a few additional remarks with regard to it.

Many old soldiers will be ready to tell the recruit that in warm climates strong drink is an absolute necessary, and that it would be beneficial to his constitution to get drunk at the least once a month. I need scarcely say, the very reverse is the case; for in warm climates, if we wish to be

* While General Sale commanded the 13th Regiment, an officer one day chanced to pass a sentry, who duly carried arms to him, without noticing the compliment as it was his duty to have done. When the officer passed again, the soldier walked about without appearing to mind him, and was brought before the General for the offence, who, on being told how matters really were, ordered the officer to walk backwards and forwards for a considerable space before the sentry, and to salute him each time.

healthy, the system must be kept low, and the blood as cool as possible. Let him look at the faces of the men who tell him this, and he will see that they are thin and angular, and afford every evidence of ill-health; but when he sees a hale, hearty old veteran, he may rest certain he is a sober man, or has drank very moderately.

Let us now glance for a moment at a drunken soldier's history. He first begins by spending all his surplus pay at the canteen, comes drunk to his barrack-room, and, supposing he is not confined, is incapable of cleaning his things for parade, where he appears dirty on the following morning, and as a matter of course, is noticed by his officer who reprimands him, or perhaps gives him extra drill. Nevertheless, in the course of a few days he is again intoxicated, creates disturbance in his quarters, is confined by his sergeant, crimed, and brought before the commanding officer, who will, probably, as it is his first time to appear before him as an offender, let him off without punishment. This indulgence, however, does not reclaim him, he again gets drunk, and is this time sentenced to pack drill,* or confinement to barracks.

Thus he sinks step by step deeper and deeper into the slough of intemperance, his mind gradually becomes callous to shame, and in the course of time he sells his necessaries most probably for one-third their value, for which offence he is tried by court-martial and sentenced to imprisonment. He is released without any reformation having been effected in him; and pursuing the same besotted course as heretofore, is soon caught drunk upon guard, when he is flogged. His next offence, in all probability, will be striking a non-commissioned officer in a moment of intoxica-

* So called from wearing a knapsack or pack.

tion, when he is tried by general court-martial, the highest military tribunal, and flogged again.

He is now a hopelessly degraded being, dead, utterly dead, to every sense of honour and honesty; and, only seeking to gratify his abominable craving for liquor, becomes a thief, is detected, and tried once more, when he is sentenced to forfeit all additional pay whilst serving, and future prospect of pension, or to be discharged with ignominy, *i. e.* drummed out of the regiment. In the former case he is thrown a beggar upon society, at the expiration of his service of twenty-one years, with a constitution broken down by every species of vice to which intemperance leads, and the depraved old wretch drags out a few years of misery and pain, at length breathing his last sigh on a little straw, in the corner of some cabin or outhouse.

I will now suppose that the recruit has been dismissed from drill (during which he should be careful to be as attentive as possible) and sent to his duty. If he has already made friends for himself he will most probably be taken into the orderly-room to write, or placed in some other situation, supposing there is a vacancy, which will free him in great measure from the drudgery of mere soldiering. However, should he not have been so fortunate as to have won the countenance of those above him, and is still wholly destitute of a patron, I would recommend him by all means to cultivate an intimacy with his pay-sergeant, who is the only person through whom he may now look for promotion. And this he can do without lessening himself in his own estimation, or being in the slightest degree officious; pay-sergeants always have much to write, and his assisting them in this way will not only further his own views with regard to promotion, but likewise be an

amusement to him; and, what is of the utmost importance, give him a knowledge of duties which he may hereafter be called upon to perform. But while he thus seeks to serve himself he should carefully conceal his object from his comrades, if he would avoid the ridicule which otherwise they will be certain to level at him.

In the existing state of things in the army, unless the aspirant for promotion does something of this kind, and makes himself useful—the grand secret of success there, as well as anywhere else—he may complete half his service before he gets a lance-corporal's stripe. He must not, "keep his candle under a bushel;" for, indeed, in the military life it is absolutely indispensable, if, in vulgar phrase, we wish, to "go ahead," to possess what is termed a *modest assurance.* There, one is lost amid a crowd; the jackets are all exactly alike; the trousers are strictly in conformity with the regulations to the last stitch in the last button-hole; one cap is the counterpart of another; and the eye will detect no difference between him and his fellows. Captains are not physiognomists, generally speaking, and cannot, therefore, know by a man's countenance whether he be an intelligent person; but his pay-sergeant, if he knows that he is such, is disposed to do him a service; and supposing he makes one of them aware of the fact with the addition that he is very sober and quiet, and otherwise a fit object for preferment, the answer will most probably be, "see that his name goes into the orderly-room when there is a vacancy in the company."

A man who is too proud to forward his own interests in a fair and honourable way, displays no inconsiderable portion of folly. A celebrated philosopher* told a friend of his who knocked his head against a beam, owing to

* Franklin.

his not stooping sufficiently when about to pass beneath it, that one must always *stoop to rise.* In the army, at the very least, a person must stoop to make himself useful, and to teach others that he can be so. This is a legitimate way to promote his interests; but, at the same time, he should never stoop to what is mean or wrong in itself for that purpose, though it were to please all the officers in his corps; better first he should ever remain a private sentinel. It is to be regretted that men are often required to do things of this sort much to the discredit of the service; still, if a man carefully upholds a respectability of demeanour, and evinces by his conduct that he is perfectly aware of the course which propriety and conventional usages sanction on his part with regard to others, and how they should behave towards him, even officers will not feel disposed to presume very much upon him.

And here it will not be inopportune to observe, that officers are very apt to fall into the mistake of supposing that every man under them are one and all of the same stamp, or at the least pretty nearly so, and consequently to be all treated exactly in the same way. In numerous instances it would be a very difficult matter to make them comprehend, that they may possibly command men every way their superiors, unless in the solitary respect of rank alone. Let them but remember Coleridge, Ledyard, Cobbett, and a host of other names too well known to require being mentioned.

I was myself very much pained at one period on being treated in this way. Some short time previous to joining my regiment in Upper Scinde, being then pay-sergeant, &c. of the detachment I was proceeding with, an officer one day said to me, " Well, we shall shortly be at headquarters; I have a liking for you; and, as most probably you

wont get promoted very soon, I will take you as my servant."

Low as my position was, I had no inclination to descend a step lower, and I may say, with truth, I experienced more pain of mind at that moment than at any other period of my military service, and felt very much disposed to resent what I considered as an insult. An instant's reflection however taught me, that, although inconsiderately, he meant to do me a kindness; and so mastering my feelings, I simply thanked him for the meditated benefit, adding that I could never think of being any one's servant.

Well, the intelligent youth has at last got to be a lance-corporal, and has now a new part to perform and new duties to learn. His character, too, by this time, is almost formed as a soldier, and he is, therefore, tolerably contented with his situation (ever the certain result of encouragement), and quite indifferent to hard beds, rough diet,* &c. &c.; and what is still better, his late comrades respect him. Command, the grand attraction of the military life, has a thousand novel charms for him; and he feels a strange delight as he hears himself, when on guard, order his relief to carry arms while passing an officer, or to bring their right shoulders up on some other occasion. All this is certainly very agreeable; but he must not allow pleasurable feelings to occupy his mind to the exclusion

* Some short time after my enlistment I was much amused by a conversation I had with a respectable Chatham tradesman touching these matters. He first began by inquiring how I liked to be a soldier, I answered tolerably well. "But how can you sleep on those hard beds?" he again asked. "Quite comfortably, now," I replied. "Well," he said, with a half unbelieving shrug, "habit is certainly every thing; but the wittals (victuals)" he added, in the most emphatic tone, "is horrible; you will never get used to that; for I have been told that the very butcher, thinking any thing good enough for soldiers, cuts up cattle for them which dies with all manner of diseases."

of weightier matters, and should recollect that he is now immediately under the eye of his officer, and that it behoves him, therefore, to be more circumspect than ever. He should, likewise, be careful to wear his solitary *chevron* with all becoming modesty; and to cultivate a spirit of kindness towards those in the one step beneath him.

As to his duty, let him do it firmly, energetically, but never officiously. Numberless peccadillos, which, although offences in themselves, are never supposed to be considered as such, and which it would be of no benefit to the service, nor to himself, to have men brought before an officer for, may be permitted to pass without notice. But when he does find it necessary to confine or to report a man, let him do so honestly, or, as a sailor would say, "above board," without the slightest feeling or appearance of malice. By acting in this way; and, apart from points of duty, pursuing an inoffensive and amiable line of conduct, willing always to serve sooner than injure when such can be done consistently with his position; he will gather round himself the respect of good men of all grades, and, what is still better, win the approval of his own heart.

The military life will be certain to steel the feelings even with regard to those indecencies which partake of the greatest grossness,* and impart a tone of sternness

* There is nothing more calculated to effect this, and to engender an utter disregard to all the proprieties of life, than the weekly doctors' inspection. It is absolutely brutish from the shameful and public way it is effected, and tends more to the demoralisation of the youth than any thing else in the service. Nor does it check to any material extent the vice it is pointed against, or remedy the evils resulting from that vice; while on the other hand it wholly breaks down the barrier which a sense of shame, natural to the mind of youth, still preserves against indecency and immorality, and contributes to render him the low, the beastly sensualist.

Why, let me ask, are the good and the bad alike subjected to this

to the mind. It is absolutely impossible to avoid imbibing these characteristics of the soldier, and more especially the latter, when he gets to command; as he will then find it frequently necessary to use all the energy he possesses, to employ all the iron in his nature, to govern some men, who are ruffians perchance of the darkest dye. And here I would remind the non-commissioned officer, that to soldiers of this stamp it is impossible to grant any indulgence; for so lost are they to every sense of honour, that they will frequently make the favours they receive a handle to injure the very persons who bestow such on them. A man on being promoted should therefore be very careful in this respect, and trust men only whom he is perfectly confident will not deceive or take an advantage of him.

After a lapse of a period, varying, according to circumstances, from four months to three years, the corporal is metamorphosed into a sergeant, and has again another and a more onerous course of duties to learn. Advice is, therefore, now more necessary to him than ever; and by this time experience should have already taught him to

degrading, this humiliating inspection. A distinction could be very easily made; a line of demarcation drawn between those who ought to be so inspected, and those who ought not; between those who have once offended in this way, and those who have never offended; instead of subjecting the boy and the man, the married and single, the ill and the well-disposed, to the same public, brutal exhibition of person.

During the period of my service I never recollect, nor do I believe there were, six cases for hospital detected in this way; and I have heard men say over and over that they would sooner go through the hardest field-day than attend the parade for doctors' inspection. Oh! it is abominable! to a vast extent a wholly unnecessary evil; a stimulant to the darkest blackguardism; and a hundredfold more disgraceful to the military service than corporal punishment. Government sends soldiers to church; it gives them bibles and prayer-books with one hand, while with the other it draws up regulations which directly tend to make them immoral, and to scoff at the most sacred institutions of Christianity.

value it when given in a proper manner, and to seek it whenever he needs it. He is emancipated from the ranks, is better dressed, looks with mingled pride and pleasure (a very pardonable feeling, by-the-by, in a soldier) on the knot of his sash which hangs gracefully downwards, and has more pay; and all these advantages together may induce him to feel a confidence in himself, which his knowledge of the part he has to perform cannot possibly warrant. If he will not lose what he has already won, and if he would still ascend the ladder of preferment, he must be the same sober, steady, and trustworthy person as heretofore, and sedulously apply himself to acquire a thorough knowledge of his duties. He is now as far as his original information could have entitled him to go, and can proceed no further unless willing to perfect himself as much as possible in what he may justly consider at this period as a profession. This is only to be done by his studiously betaking himself to his drill-book, a thorough acquaintance with the contents of which, both in a theoretical and practical light, can only be effected by untiring and industrious application.

Nor is he to suppose for a single moment that a knowledge of this sort is to be had in a short space, however naturally clever he may be, or however close his application. Speaking of application, I would not recommend that it be of a very intense character ; he must not endeavour to do too much at once; for nothing can be more true than what Locke has said, " That the great art to learn much is to undertake a little at a time." Poring continually over a drill-book is not the way soonest to master its contents, but rather the reverse, for the mind as well as the body requires rest and relaxation, and too constant employment unhinges and weakens its powers. But I would

advise him to be as methodical in his application as circumstances will permit of, and always to devote the same hours and the same duration of time to its study. Practice will soon improve his memory, supposing it is not already a good one (a fact well-known to schoolmen); and by being attentive at drills, he must, in the course of a few years, become well disciplined himself, and capable of instructing others; when he will find his position a very proud and a very independent one, apart (if it is not his own fault) of his being certain of further promotion.

The temptations of an intelligent person are stronger, when he rises to the rank of sergeant, than before. He has now more surplus pay, and associates with men who have certainly a greater degree of polish than those hitherto his companions, and whose society, therefore, is more assimilated to the kind he was in all probability accustomed to previous to having entered the army, and so possessed of stronger inducements for him. He must, consequently, be very careful of how he acts with regard to them; and while he lives on as friendly terms as possible with his brother non-commissioned officers, and is always ready to do them a kindness, he is to let no lure they can throw out, no inducement they can offer, cause him to do what is wrong.

I would especially recommend the sergeant to wear his honours modestly, and not to act in a way which will draw the ridicule of his superiors or others upon him. He should likewise be more chary than ever to abstain from invidious remark with regard to his officers, with whom he should now be in a great measure identified in his dealings with those under him.

Notwithstanding his numerous engagements the sergeant will still have much leisure for mental improvement;

he cannot possibly, comparatively speaking, know a great deal, and should therefore devote some portion of his time in adding to his stock of general information. Zimmerman, a very amiable philosopher, tells us that "all men without exception, have something to learn," and that "whatever may be their distinguished rank in society, none can ever be truly great but by personal merit."

Nothing tends more to aid a person in the acquisition of knowledge than a methodical division of his time, and soldiers above all classes of people should be methodical, for the military system is calculated to make them so. If a man will sit down each evening and devote a certain time to the acquisition of bookish lore of a useful character, he will find himself possessed of a valuable stock of information at the expiration of that service, which other men, not equally sedulous in seeking knowledge, and who are content to idle away all their leisure time, will leave, perchance, the very boobies they were when they entered it. It is related of a King of Macedon, that having one day invited Dionysius the younger to dine with him at Corinth, he attempted to deride the father of his royal guest because he had blended the characters of prince and poet, and inquired how he could find leisure to write odes and tragedies. "In those hours," was the reply, "which you and I spend in drunkenness and debauchery." I would recommend the soldier to bear this anecdote in mind, and to reflect how much more rational it would be, how much more beneficial to his interests, to devote his leisure hours to the acquisition of knowledge, than to pass them in drunkenness and debauchery.

I will now suppose a man to be really possessed of information and knowledge, and would in that case advise that they be simply shown with regard to his duties, but never

made a parade of; for in reality it is injurious in the army to appear to know much, apart from the idle vanity which prompts display. The character of a good drill, a steady, sober, useful man, should be all that a non-commissioned officer ought to aspire to. Talent or genius in his grade are wholly without a field for their display, and their exhibition, supposing he possesses them, will only make him ridiculous; he had therefore better eschew pretensions of this nature when he can turn them to no good account.

When a man attains to the rank of pay-sergeant, it is almost unnecessary to say that his conduct should be guided in his pecuniary dealings with the men of his company, by the strictest honesty and most scrupulous integrity. Numbers, it is true, act quite the reverse of this, and endeavour to defraud those under their charge in every way that they think can possibly escape detection. Yet how many of these men are brought to disgrace for this sort of conduct, and as privates, remain living proofs of that trite old saw, that "Honesty is the best policy."

But here I must leave the soldier; as by the time he reaches this grade, he will, or at least ought to have much more experience in military matters than I am possessed of, and should be fully equal to seeing, and clearly too, his own way without assistance.

And now, Reader, if you are a young man dissatisfied with your condition in life because you consider yourself superior to it, and have been induced to suppose you will get into your proper sphere by entering the army, I would offer you, in conclusion, a word of advice.

If dissatisfied with your condition, reflect well before you take a step which will have the most important influence on all your after life; a man who binds himself for an unlimited period, must be guilty of the greatest folly,

should he do so rashly or inconsiderately. You are already aware, that to succeed in improving your condition in the army, you must be patient, industrious, methodical, humble, and, as the truth had better be told, servile. Do not suppose for a single moment you can do much good there, without at the least a major part of these qualifications; I thought I could be a soldier without being servile; I was simple enough to imagine that unblemished reputation, zeal for the service, and an earnest desire to be useful, would be my stepping-stones to preferment:—I need scarcely say that I was deceived.

In the army, you will have to be your own servant: to perform all the menial offices so disagreeable to those who have had persons hitherto to wait on them. You must not resent insult, if the person offering it be only a lance-corporal; and you will have to listen patiently and in silence to the contemptuous remarks of a man who, very probably, is your superior only because his father was fortunate in trade and therefore able to pay 450*l.* for a commission for his son; who has in his turn learned (to him, perchance, an unmeaning phrase) to say, "'Pon his honour," and to look down on you with all the quaint consequence of little-mindedness, as a being of an inferior species.

If you are a person of intelligence, therefore, and capable of earning a subsistence in any respectable way, I would advise you to eschew the army while the existing state of things there continues; until, at the very least, the officer is taught to act agreeably to the laws of the service, in his dealings with those under him; and when he cannot, at any rate, compel them to be servile or mean, if not themselves so disposed. As matters stand at present, the man who may have learned at a hedge-

school to half spell, half read a page or two, and to scrawl "his copy dated," will be almost certain to get the whip hand of you in the race for promotion; for he is a *useful* person, and will assist the lieutenant's servant occasionally, or help to clean the captain's boots. Rest assured, the army, as now administered, is the last place you should go to for the purpose of improving your condition. Resolve rather to be a citizen of the world, and to take the energy and intelligence you may possess to where they will have a reasonable chance of being fairly appreciated.

UPB

TABLE,

Showing the probable proportion to each other of the causes which induce men at present to enter the army.

1	Indigent.—Embracing labourers and mechanics out of employ, who merely seek for support . .	80 in 120
2	Indigent.—Respectable persons induced by misfortune or imprudence	2 „ 120
3	Idle.—Who consider a soldier's life an easy one .	16 „ 120
4	Bad characters.—Who fall back upon the army as a last resource	8 „ 120
5	Criminals.—Who seek to escape from the consequence of their offences	1 „ 120
6	Perverse sons.—Who seek to grieve their parents	2 „ 120
7	Discontented and restless	8 „ 120
8	Ambitious	1 „ 120
9	Others	2 „ 120

GLOSSARY.

Annah, a copper coin, value one half-penny
Allah, God
Allah-ul-Allah, God is God (usually an exclamation of surprise)
Ameer, prince (Arabic)
Arrack, a liquor distilled from rice

Bamboo, cane
Bangle, a ring on the leg or arm
Batta, donation
Bazaar, a place for selling
Bebee, a woman
Bobagee, a cook
Bout, very
Brahmin, a priest
Buggy, a vehicle on springs
Bunder, a pier into the sea
Buneah, a shopman
Bungalow, a house

Cha, six or tea
Char, four

Charpoy, a bedstead
Chēcs, screens of cane
Chattie, an earthen vessel
Chuckarow, a boy
Chowdrie, principal bazaar officer
Chunam, white cement
Chupattie, flour cake
Compound, an enclosed space
Congee, rice
Congee-house, a prison (literally rice house)
Connae, food
Coolie, a porter
Cowrie, a small shell used as a coin

Dâk, the post
Dâkwollah, a postman
Dandie, a boatman
Dharroo, a liquor
Dho, two
Dhobie, a washerman
Dhoudh, milk
Doolie, an inferior sort of palanqueen

Egg, one

Ghoorkee, a hill man
Gunny-bag, a piece of coarse canvas used by soldiers in camp for holding their beds, &c.
Gurhum, hot
Guttery, a quilt

Haji, a begging friar who has made a pilgrimage to Mecca
Hackerie, a rude car
Hatcha, good
Hedherow, come here

Hindoo, black
Hindoostan, place of blacks (Persian)

Jungle, a wood or waste district

Khitmutgar, a head servant
Khutha, a dog

Lascar, a sailor or tent man
Loll Bazaar, a place of brothels
Loote, plunder
Lotah, a drinking vessel
Lug, a soft cake
Lunghi, a narrow cloth

Masjeed or Masjit, a mosque
Minahgh, a month
Minar, a round tower
Mohr, a gold coin
Monghee, a captain of a boat
Muckin, butter
Mussuk, a waterskin
Mysthery, a tradesman

Nia jonnae, a recruit
Nappie, a barber
Nulla, a creek or branch of a river

Otta, flour

Padee, tillage land
Palkee, a small tent
Pani, water
Paria, lowest caste
Pice, a small copper coin

Rajah, a chief
Rootie, bread
Rupee, a coin, value about 2s.
Ryot, a peasant

Sahib, sir
Salaam, salute
Sepoy, a soldier
Serang, a boatswain
Sice, a groom
Sirwan, a camel driver
Stan, place (Persian)
Soubah, a province or governor of a province
Sudder bazaar, principal bazaar

Tom-tom, a sort of drum
Tope, a shady grove

Wollah, a man or fellow (usually applied to craftsmen)

Zemindhar, a landowner
Ziaret, a shrine

THE END.

C. WHITING, BEAUFORT HOUSE, STRAND.